

CONTENTS

Prologue	3
Chapter 1	6
Ch. Teacher 1	17
Chapter 2	31
Chapter 3	51
Interlude 1	70
Chapter 4	73
Ch. Teacher 2	88
Chapter 5	103
Chapter 6	120
Chapter 7	136
Ch. Teacher 3	161
Interlude 2	166
Chapter 8	168
Interlude 3	189
Chapter 9	191

Chapter 10.....	206
Ch. Teacher 4	224
Chapter 11	234
Epilogue	251
Afterword.....	253

PROLOGUE

THE GIRL AND MASSACRE

1

“It hurts... help me... pl-”

There’s a girl beside a huge manly figure, her situation is rather pitiful. Her lower half is completely separated from the upper half, she’s crawling to the figure slowly, but every time she move closer to the figure, she seem to suffer even more. The figure come closer to the little girl. She seems to grab its leg. Her body is full of holes, is like Swiss cheese but worse. Both of her eyes are stabbed with a black metal pole. Bleeding out, but there’s no tear coming from it.

Her situation is an unpleasant sight, but what’s in front of the figure eyes is more displeasing. From what it seems to be a village, now just a scene of massacre. There’s blood everywhere, but more importantly is the people from what it seems to be a village. The smell from the still fresh blood is enough to make someone vomit. It’s a sight that could only be described as representation of hell itself. To briefly describe what kind of situation that the villagers have gone through, it’s basically torture.

“...”

The little girl that’s now attached to the figure is trying to say something, yet her voice won’t come out. She’s still suffering, unlike the other villagers that’s already been dead. She’s still alive. The figure lower its body, but still

much taller than the girl. It seems like the figure is saying something to the girl. With that, the girl release her grip from the figures leg.

Right after the girl release her grip, the figure starts walking towards the village before stopping right in front of a house. It's the biggest house in that village. Is it the chief house? The house model in this village is rather interesting, despite the heat from outside of the village, they still build the house out of highly flammable material, there's also not enough ventilation, are they trying to suffocate or something? Despite the highly flammable house, none of them seems to be burning right now, even after such massacre.

The figure continue its walk without entering a single house. The figure arrived at the center of the village. Is the figure praying? Couple moments later, rain starts to pour in, the blood that's still fresh start to diminish, merging with the dirt. The figure walk towards one of the villager before heading back to the still alive girl.

To give you more information about what happened to the villagers. Their body is impaled by a 3 meter long metal pole, similar to what happen to the girl, but they're impaled from the opening of the mouth straight through their body, coming out from the rectum. Their hand is positioned covering their crotch, yet it's impaled by the same metal rod. Male, female, children, elderly, none of them gets discriminated from the massacre.

“Do you still want to live?”

The figure spoke to the little girl.

Nod

After getting a rather pitiful nod from the girl the figure put its hand at the little girl body.

[;Etanracnier, Dnats tsal!]

With the chant, the girl passed out. But soon after, the girl body start to reconstruct itself. Every orifices start to heal, her eyes is back, her lower part is back.

<Body reconstruction complete>

<Engaging to the second phase>

<Second phase complete>

<Rerouting memories... Succeed>

<Re-installing skill... Succeed>

<Evolution Mutation Complete!>

<Individual have evolved. Now, *'Undead'*>

<Proficiency reached>

<Auto Selecting a Skill: Lord of Death>

<**Title Granted: Ruler of Life and Death, Possessing the skill; Lord of Life and Lord of Death, the holder could manipulate life and death, thus Immune to such state**>

<Re-applying consciousness>

CHAPTER 1

BEGINNING OF BEGINNING

1

“... So that is the purpose of a recount text!”

“Next week, there’s going to be a midterm exam. So study up everyone!”

I’m stuck in my school. I hate school. You think that American school system is bad? Hohoho... You should try this one out!

That right there is my English teacher. He’s a cool guy, likes to talk about anime sometimes, but also could be serious in other times. Just like any other teacher huh? Hahaha...

English is not my strong aspect, yet I don’t mind taking this class for a short nap. The teacher doesn’t seem to be bothered with it. Honestly, the teacher is so nice, its presence is calming me down. That’s how nice he is. His tone of voice is not sinister like other teacher.

So, about the midterm exam that he’s mentioning. Yeah, I don’t really care. My grade aren’t great in the first place.

[Something is coming!]

Just when the teacher start walking away and preparing to leave to class, one kid decided to stop him.

Urgh... Why? I just want to go to the cafeteria! Just leave already man!

“So about the material that were gonna show up on the midterm exam, is it from chapter 6-13?”

“Yes, that’s correct, Nate”

That kid name is Nate. He’s the nerd in the class. His grade aren’t bad, but aren’t good either. He’s usually quiet though. This is a rather rare sight! Not that I opened my eyes, but just hearing his voice I’ve already had a mixed feeling about it. His voice is still strange even to this day. That’s how little he talks. No one seems to notice though. I guess everyone is on their own state of mind.

“Anyway, any other question?”

No, can you just get out already? Geez man, you’re wasting my time. I rolled my still closed eyes back mockingly at the teacher. He didn’t realize so it’s fine! It’s not like he could see through my eyelid though.

Sigh

I sigh in my heart, knowing that the class is ending. But rather than hearing the class door opens, I’ve been greeted by a total silence. The sudden event is unsettling, I didn’t want to open my eyes, but I can’t really help it.

Everyone seems to be startled by something, staring at something, I almost laugh by the sheer tension and silence, but soon realize that this is no ordinary event. I change my gaze and see that there’s a faint light on the floor, it seems to brighten up slowly.

The floor light up like it’s been coated by a bio luminescent gel, or rather, paint? It glows like a ‘glow in the dark’ stick that you could buy in a nearby convenient store for \$1. Giving a very faint green light. Yet, this light glows more than the sun that’s coming through the class window.

Because I sit in the back of the class, I examine every student closely. It seems no one is playing tricks. The class is in a little bit of panic, but after learning that the light does nothing, everyone starts to calm down again.

I see some discussion start to emerge from the sudden event. The teacher continue his step towards the door, ignoring what just happen. But, just when he twist the door handle, the light brightens up again, like a lot!

“Wha-!”

“What is this?”

I took a peek of what is currently happening. Is the classroom door locked? No, the door definitely opens. But there’s nothing on the other side. Am I sleepi-?

BOOM!

That’s what I hear right before the whole class crumbles, a feeling of me falling down is getting up on my stomach. Sending us to the seemingly bottomless depth of the abyss, I finally snap out. This was not a dream!

“!”

<Unknown guest have arrived. Executing protocol>

A huge voice rang from the abyss, at the exact moment time froze. I try to look around and see if anyone is nearby. I realize that the ‘abyss’ is just a black space, you couldn’t see much. When I try to move my arm, it seems like my arm is swimming through a gel like substance.

After turning my head to some direction, I see that there’s a faint light in the distance. I focused my gaze at the seemingly faint light and it seems like it’s getting bigger every time. With that, the seemingly endless abyss start to light up to pure white. With so much light presented to my eye I reflexively close my eyes.

<Protocol has been executed. Calculating...>

The voice that I hear from before now rang inside my head. The voice is loud. Super loud! I could only describe it as ‘The Voice of the World’ that’s how loud it is. But it doesn’t hurt my ear what so ever, so I guess I could calm down a bit.

<Proficiency has been added to Individual, Lia>

Saying that, it still creeping me out a little bit. Why does this voice suddenly exist? And how does it know my name?

My head is starting to hurt, after this countless thought that I gone through. I've never had a headache, but I do know that this is probably worse than that. Though I've also never get punched in the head, nor stabbed, I do feel like I'm being stabbed in the head right now.

I try to move my body, but it feels like my whole body is obliterated by the 'explosion' earlier.

Twitched

What? What's that? I feel electricity from where my arm supposed to be. Wait, is this what stroke feels like?

“...”

Hmmm... It also seems like I can't make any noise. What should I do? I guess I just have to wait until one of the angel greeted me huh?

Touch

Wha-! What is that? Something just touch me! Hey! That's sexual harassment!

“Hnggh...!”

I'm trying to scream my lungs out, but from what I can hear is just a pitiful moan, MY pitiful moan. I don't know if I'm in a panic or not, it sure feels like it. This is all new experience to me.

<Unable to execute command. Trying other alternative>

The voice echoes again inside my head. This time, I've already given up, so the menacing loud voice doesn't scare me anymore. I'm still thinking on how do get myself in this kind of situation.

<Permission to use system inner program>

Huh? System? Is the world really is a matrix this whole time? Robots gonna eat me now? Come on! Have you already suffer me enough? We even pity the animal we eat by giving them painless death.

<Permission granted. Using inner program>

<Mesameru!>

“Aaaaaahh....!”

“Oh, hey! I woke up!”

“What happ-”

“!”

What?!

I examine my body. First of all, my chest are gone! Second, this is not even my body. As a matter of fact, this body belongs to someone around about 10 to 12 years of age. What’s happening? I didn’t signed up for this!

I don’t mind the 12 year old girl body that I’ve resided my soul against, but my chest are gone!

Anyway, I don’t even know where I am right now. From what I can gather, I woke up inside of a forest near a river.

I could hear the sound of the river, and my ass is hurting because I’m sitting on a rocky surface. After examining my body and seeing that there’s no wound, or rather a wound that would threaten my life, I walk towards the river.

Seeing that all of my five senses are back, I take the temperature of the water and wash my face to get rid of my remaining sleepiness.

It seems like temperature is not that bad. I look up at the sky, it seems like the sun just started to reach its peak. I settle myself, leaning back onto a tree and recounting what has happen.

Sigh

I let out a massive sigh. Even if the sun is in its highest point, the shade that the tree gave me is more than enough to cover the heat ray, avoiding myself from a sunburn.

<Final checkup. Re-Calculating>

I almost scream at the voice sudden appearance. Honestly, can you knock on my head first?

<Available Skill: Perseverance, A skill that could grant anything in the cost of SP and / or MP, even HP, EXP and LP>

<Title granted: Ruler of Perseverance, The holder of this skill have an amazing perseverance. Ex skill granted: Determination Lv.10 and Unyielding>

Huh? Perseverance? That's completely opposite to what my trait is, as a matter of fact, I'm a pessimistic person, but okay, I guess I could take the 'compliment'.

After that nonsense I continue my recount of what happen before soon realizing that I'm passing out.

I guess that kinda makes sense, I've gone through a lot of panic attack to get to this point. Finding myself alive is already been a gift, though if I could, I would like to wish for more.

With that final exchange of thought I fall asleep under the tree, the sound of the river is music to my ears. I've been longing for this type of situation, sitting under a tree in a forest listening to the sound of a river. Its poetic right? Well... minus the fact that I had to go through that suffering, this is just what I've wanted all along.

Meow

I woke up to the sound of a cat meowing next to my leg. I'm still hearing the sound of the river, but it's getting cold. That's right, the sun is setting.

I started to panic (again) but I just remembered that I had a lighter in my pocket that I snatched from my friend that got caught smoking by me.

I gather some wood up, by the time I finished the sun already settle down.

Before I got transported here, I remembered that we're just finishing English class and trying to prepare for PE. So I currently wearing my PE clothes under my usual high school uniform.

What a lucky coincidence huh? I guess I don't have to worry about getting cold.

Lick

“Ahahahaha, stop! It tickles!”

The cat is licking my feet, I think it’s trying to snuggle with me? I’m not a cat person, I picked it up either way.

Usually cats like to get moody when got picked up right? This one is rather docile, I guess.

I take a closer look at the cat and examining it. It’s a black cat with dark green eyes, almost looks like a dragon eye.

I have a feeling that this black cat, it’s what you called a bad omen by the Europeans. But at least, this one is not all black, the feet area and the top of the head is white.

Saying that, I actually have no food with me...

Turns

I took a second take at the cat...

Meow

The cat tilt its head in confusion. It’s cute, too cute. I can’t possibly eat you. But I’m starving over here.

I don’t know what I’m supposed to do. Am I supposed to be hesitant by this? I mean, human do this right? I remembered that there’s a restriction to eat carnivorous animal, but I’m in a pinch here. I guess I just have to hold this hunger.

...

Aarrhgg...!

I can’t take it more! I grabbed the cat before snapping out to reality (again).

I can’t stop thinking that my attitude has change a lot. I also couldn’t get my head straight, why am I even here on the first place? Whose body is this? And why is this body found itself inside of a forest?

The air is getting colder as I'm thinking. Well... this is the only thing that I can do to kill time.

Right now I'm still inside the forest, still near the river, and still under the same tree.

There seems to be something that's off. There's no other animal in the vicinity where I'm currently residing.

That means this is a territory of another animal, I don't know if this animal is dangerous or not. But I haven't met any other animal beside this c-

*Sh*t!*

Slash!

The fire went out. Wind suddenly blowing through me, with the freezing air and no fire, I immediately start shivering. Even if I wear two set of clothes, I've never experience this sheer drop on temperature before.

I've also never jumped so hard in my life. The sound of my heart beating is super clear. I don't like anaerobic exercise but I know that this is not how your heart supposed to beat.

So it is the cat. I know something's of. But how could I not thought of it sooner! This is bad!

"Human? Or not a human? You're kind of weird! I don't remember seeing any human with black hair. Yet, I also don't remember seeing a majin without a tail!"

"So you could talk huh?"

Though I'm in a pinch, I don't tend to panic. I've always gotten into fights against a lot of guys.

Look, my appearance in my before is kinda erotic, so I can't just leave myself open all the time.

I studied 2 martial, Karate and Taekwondo. So I'm quite knowledgeable about that sort of stuff. But none of them teaches me how to fight a cat okay!

“Hahaha! You’re truly interesting! It seems like you know nothing about this world! With that unique hair of yours, it almost feels like you’re not even from this world!”

“!”

Even with its cat like appearance, this ‘thing’ have a huge presence. Just when the ‘cat’ start to swing its paw, an even more dangerous and menacing intent surge down upon me. And what’s that? ‘Not even from this world’? What do you mean?

“Now now... Haven’t you learned your lesson, you damn Kitten!”

I heard a voice right above me, yet I can’t move my head upward. Am I scared? I know that whatever figure that just said that is not simple.

“Huft! It’s not really a nice ground to stand huh?”

A figure jump down right in front of me. Its appearance is just like a shadow, at least that’s what I’m seeing.

But for someone to call that monster a mere kitten! Just how much confident do you have inside your head!

“Who sent you here? We make a promise that this is my area, and you have yours!”

Is the cat monster scared? Why? Who is this man or perhaps woman? Is he/she a big deal?

“Hmm... Yes, we did make that promise, I remembered i-”

“Then why are you here!”

“Now now... I’m here because I have a feeling that I may or may not have to pick two being from this area of the forest. Specifically ‘your area’. So that’s why I’m here. Also, this girl, is probably the one.”

“What nonsense! You dare to challenge me?”

Just when the cat starting to get more and more angry and my ears starting to burst out by how loud the cat voices is, the figure finally reveal itself.

From my point of view I could only makes up what I'm seeing right now. The figure is a woman, not a tall one, rather, it's kinda small.

Yet her presence overwhelmed that of the monster cat. Her left hand makes a 'shh' gesture while other part of her body is relaxed.

"Aiya... I'm pretty sure that you have one more 'Ihito' in your nest?"

Ihito? I'm beyond confused. One second I'm trying to eat, the next second I'm meeting a monster, now I'm learning other language?

Because of the girl presence I'm starting pass out. I can't help it okay, her presence is something that I could not comprehend. Even the 'abyss intent' is not as bad as this. Is she more powerful that 'The Sound of the World'?

"I'm not going to let you take it. Nor even giving it you! Even if my life is on the line!"

"Hmm...? You mean it? Because I really do have a strong feeling about this you know. You cannot just get in the way of my feeling."

"Shut up! I will never forgive someone that goes back on their own word!"

Slash

"Haa... Okay."

The last thing I hear before passing out was the sound of blood splatter and fire crackles heating my already passed out body.

...

"Hmm... So this is the two individual that I have to take care of? Master's kinda weiiiiird..."

"This one is a human child with black hair and black eyes. Ooh! She already got a title, 'Ruler of Perseverance' this is truly a handy title and skill! But it's a good thing that I came in just in time. If not, she'll probably be dead by her own skill..."

"As for the other one, hmm... Is this what they called *Felis catus*? Its appearance is closely resembled that legendary beast that I just happen to stumble

across. If people from see this animal roaming around in a city, I think a lot of them going to freak out! Hahaha...!"

"Ooh... this one also has a premade skill, 'Envy'. Hmm... I guess it's not that bad... What should I do now? I guess I just have to wait until the girl wakes up."

CH. TEACHER 1

THE UNLUCKY WEEABOO TEACHER

1

I see, after seeing a lot of anime I've finally get transported to another world! This is my time to shine! I just have to wait for me to meet a beautiful girl that's going to be my waifu now! Mwuahaha!

Though saying that, I've been transported in the middle of a forest. I'm not a boy scout, but I do have some survival skill just in case something like this happens.

<Skill Granted: Survivalist Lv.1, the user now has the ability to survive without food and water for an extended period of time.>

<Skill Granted: Student Overseer Lv.1, the user now has the ability to take an acquaintance, with every acquaintance have the ability to share their skill and stats. Max Number of acquaintance=1>

See? Told you?

Anyway, I've been hearing this voice inside my head for a while now. It's not a pleasant voice in the slightest. But it's seems like this monotone machine like voice is what they called a 'system' on the isekai world right? This voice resemble that of a google assistant voice but with less emotion.

Right now, I'm actually in the middle of gathering wood for my campfire. I guess you can't have a huge expectation about getting the best of the best when you got isekai'd right?

I don't mind gathering fire wood all day, but if this continue every day, it's going to get boring very quickly.

The system said that I have the 'Survivalist' skill. The description said that this skill could prolong the need for water and food intake.

Let's see... If a normal human could last for 8 days without food and 3 days without water, and let's assume that my Lv.1 skill will determine the prolong effect depends on a percentages and not just adding things up.

If my Lv.1 Skill will prolong the need for water intake for 12 hour. That means that it will prolonged it for about 15%, and if we assume that the function of adding my level makes a linier graph, we could also assume that when I reached Lv.10, it will be prolonged for about 150% from the normal amount. About 8 days for water, and about 20 days for the food intake.

This skill is quite handy, but I don't know how to level it up. I don't even know how this whole 'system' work. But, I guess it's the same as trying to level up a skill in real life. I just have to practice it over and over again. With that being said, now I planned to not eat and drink for these couple of days.

It may seems like a bad idea, but trust me, it's for experimental purposes okay? Trust me here.

Come to think of it, I also get a skill before those two, I think it's called 'Appraisal'? If I remembered it correctly, it comes with the description somewhere along the line of; 'Can be used to see stats of other thing and any other inhabitant of the system, as long as its level is higher than the other party appraisal level.'

When it said 'Inhabitant of the system', I know that this world revolve around a system like law. But when I test some things out, it's also seems like basic physics still work here.

This is also when I know that I'm the protagonist of this novel. With so much manga and light novel that I read, I know that the main character has an appraisal like skill. I guess I'm really the chosen one huh?

All jokes aside, this skill is super useful. As many of you probably heard about this, Sun Tzu said that “If you know the enemy and know yourself, you need not fear the result of a hundred battles. If you know yourself but not the enemy, for every victory gained you will also suffer a defeat. If you know neither the enemy nor yourself, you will succumb in every battle.”

So if I could know their stats, I could estimate my chance of winning, possibly setting up a strategy to counter their stats, and if I couldn't appraise them that means that they're just a lot more powerful than me.

I don't know the range of this skill, but I have a feeling that it's somewhat generous. As a matter of fact, let's test it right now!

Wait, how do I activate the skill again? Wait, do I even know how to activate a skill?

Hmm... Let's see... If this is a normal isekai, I could just think of activating the skill and usually it worked pretty well. Except, I already tried that. When? Right after getting the 'notification' that I acquired the skill appraisal. I can't help it okay, I was just too excited.

Yet, I haven't been able to activate any skill that I have. I don't have a single clue on how to activate a skill. Hey system, can you tell me please!

Arrgh!! Why does, this happens to me all the time!

Good things that my 'Survivalist' skill seems to be a passive one. If not, I'll probably gone mad by now.

The sun is still pretty high and I've done collecting the firewood. Now I just have to start a fire. This is where my boy scouts skill comes to use! At least this one will not disappoint me.

I've worked so hard to achieve this level okay. So it's only justice for me to be able to create fire easily okay.

But, because the sun is still pretty high, I take a stroll around my area, carrying the fire wood with one of my arm, I'm trying to find a water source. I did say that I want to hold my hunger and thirst, but this is just for extra precaution.

The trees in this forest is tall, judging by the moisture in the air, this forest classified as a tropical forest, I think?

While taking a stroll and bringing the firewood, I came across an opening between this two trees.

I peeked between the two trees and see that there's this opening, I peeked a little more and see that this is connected to some sort of a really long alleyway. I could only make up that at the end of this alleyway/tunnel is a faint ray of light. I hope this is what you called 'The light at the end of the tunnel', but not in a bad way.

After thinking whether I should go in or not, I've decided to go inside of this alleyway. Positioning my firewood to make sure it doesn't fall, and so I squeezed my way through the two trees still bringing the firewood.

The entrance of the tunnel is rather narrow but after you get inside it's not too bad actually. You could easily fit one more people here. I was impressed.

I continued my stroll down the tunnel, dragging my palm across the tunnel walls. There's a rather interesting pattern all through the wall of this tunnel. It doesn't seem to be some sort of a writing. It almost looked like the picture that you would find inside a prehistoric cave.

I try to take a closer look at this 'picture' but I couldn't make out what's the meaning behind all of these. The wall here is made out of wood, but interestingly, the wood here is kind of nice, it's almost like someone groomed it every day. There's no vine what so ever.

Anyway, as I said before, this tunnel is quite long, and without being able to tell the time while inside of this tunnel, I obviously have to do something. Because, the last thing I want when I get out of this cave is getting hypothermia. And thus I started counting.

This method is repetitive and kind of pissing me of a little bit. But I know it will worked, I saw Senkuu did it when he got turned into stone. Well, when I tried it, it took me around five minutes just to remember where did I left of because I was distracted for just a few seconds.

Is it 4329 or 4239? Or is it on the 44 hundred?

Arrghh!!

Anyway, according to my calculation, it's supposed to be around 3 PM outside. I started counting from what it seems to be 1.30 PM by just judging the position of the sun. So it's been about 90 minutes since I got inside of this tunnel.

Now, let me tell you what happen when I've just got sent into this world.

When I woke up I hear the system said that every protocol has been successfully executed. I was still confused on what happen back then. But after letting some moment passed, I remembered that the class I teaches crumbles down and thus I was teleported here, inside of this forest.

I stand up. The system seems to be calling again that I've been granted the skill called 'appraisal', and thus I've started my 'experimentation' on how to activate the skill. You probably know, that doesn't end well for me.

I was not feeling really well when I just got sucked to this world. But soon I've come to be accustomed to it. For clothes, I still have my previous clothes that I wear when I teach those class, but my phones are gone.

Then I looked up to the sky to estimate the time because I don't have my phones. Well, it's not like phone will work in this world though. When I see that the sun is starting to reach its peak, I decided to collect some fire wood, thus leading me to this kind of situation.

How long has it been again?

2 hour? 3 hour?

It appeared that I've lost the track of time again. Honestly, Senkuu, how did you did it? But I could just wait. Because, not long after, I'll finally be free from this tunnel.

How long is this tunnel anyway? If I calculated it, it should be around 10-15 km (6-10 mi) then? That's a long tunnel.

Anyway, the light is getting bigger and bigger, but the tunnel is getting smaller and smaller. Realizing this, if I were to bring more stuff here, I wouldn't be able to get out, the exit door is way narrow than the entrance.

After squeezing my way through I was shocked that this lead towards a path way. It's not a fancy pathway, but it's still a pathway either way.

I looked back at the tunnel that I've just gone through, and it seems like it's... Closing?

*What? What kind of maze runner sh*t is this?*

So what you're saying that, if I were to come later than this, I would've been stuck inside there? Talking about scary. I guess my misfortune has ran out huh? That's at least a good sign right?

After gulping my saliva, I continue my stroll down the path way, hoping I could get into some sort of a settlement.

The tree here is really beautiful. It's so huge! I bet you'll never seen trees this large and probably will never see this in your world.

I try to climb one of the fallen tree trunk. It's a huge trunk so I have to put my back into it. When I've finally climb the tree trunk, my heart sunk to the scenery. I look at the sun, even though the sun is hitting me, I don't feel any heat from it. I could only imagine how cold it is when night time comes.

Anyway, the sun just started to set, so I've decided that I'm going to settle for the night here. It looked like my 'calculation' is not that far from what I imagine. I make a makeshift fire using the bow drill method then make my surrounding to represent that of a tent.

"I guess I'll stay here for the night, I hope no beast comes to greet me at night."

Thus my sleepiness take over my body making me fall into a deep slumber. I guess it makes sense, I did travel a long way to get here, not to mention the fact that I haven't eat anything yet.

"..."



“!”

Oh no, I woke up too late!

If you say ‘it’s not a big deal’. You’re wrong! It’s a big deal! I still have my firewood, but the main problem is the sun! It’s already start to set again!

This is bad, very bad.

I haven’t move anywhere since I woke up, yet I feel like this is not something good. I check my surrounding by just turning my head, I couldn’t find anything and yet it feels like I’ve disturbed someone, or perhaps ‘something’.

Right now I have two main problems. One of them is this feeling of being watched, and the other one is more complex. Let’s take care of this ‘problem’ first shall we?

I try to not make a sudden movement, just in case the ‘something’ that ‘watching’ over me will move by the sudden movement. I don’t particularly have anything covering me while I’m vast asleep, so I guess it make sense that something notice me sleeping here, not to mention I also sleep right beside a huge pathway. I’m basically like a homeless man sleeping beside the street.

After sometimes I’ve manage to stand up. The pressure is still here, but I’ve become accustomed to it.

Even if the sun is setting, I still have to make my journey. So I packed my stuff up, and start my walk.

I didn’t hear any other footstep except mine. If this pressure’s still from the same creature that means this creature’s presence is just that big. I don’t have a bad hearing, in fact my hearing is pretty extraordinary. So that only means that this creature is quite faraway form where I’m currently standing.

Seeing the sun sets from this forest, I think it’ll never gets old. Because I didn’t want to bring any attention, I didn’t make a torch for myself. At least I could still tell my surroundings.

I can't stop thinking that this creature is getting closer and closer to me. Now it feels like this creature's behind me, watching every step that I take.

Hey! I'm not too good with tension like this okay! It feels like my legs going to give up any second now, but I keep pushing forward nonetheless.

Does this thing really know where I am?

If this thing could see me in the dark I'm screwed. But thinking about it, it seems like this creature's following me all this time. At the fact that there's only one road and that's where I'm currently walking on, I can't shake off the feeling that I'm going to be some creature's dinner.

I quickly find a shelter and start making a torch, just in case I need to flee, I could make the torch as some sort of a make shift flash bang. Using the same bow drill method from earlier, I quickly make the torch.

With that, I take a more complicated path, going around the giant tree rather than going through a straight and centered path in the middle. At least I could be at ease that the creature won't easily sneak up on me because of the bushes.

I continue my journey ignoring the ever increasing presence of the creature. I started to think that this whole isekai thing is not a good idea, for my heart that is. What if I came across dangerous things? I couldn't even fight a dog in my previous world.

What if I must fight a dragon here? I think I don't even a chance fighting a lion, even if my life's on the line. I'm not scrawny, but as a normal human, we're not trained to do things like this. This ain't a prehistoric era man!

I started to think many scenarios to where 'if' I came across danger I just have to do enough things for me to get away from it. Look, I don't think I could take care of any danger that this world has to offer, and thus I decided to just flee.

How long has it been again?

It seems like I have lost track of time again. I'm sick of all this, by the way, I'm starting to starve here. I'm impressed that I haven't passed out yet, with how much walking I had to do.

Whoosh!

My torch went out. This isn't great. Not great what so ever. I froze in place staring at my torch. There's no wind, no sound, the temperature is cold but I didn't sense any drop in temperature what so ever.

When the torches went out. The ever expanding presence of that creature's really starting to creep my bones out. All this time, I've been enduring the presence of that creature, but now with my torches out and I couldn't see anything, this is one million times scarier.

An ordinary person has a panic time around about 20 second. So if I could just do it right now rather than when the danger comes that would be great, thank you!

It seems like nothing's coming yet.

I sit down, trying to light a new torch. But just when I decide to do that, I hear a step. Wait, no. A march?

It sounded like a stampede of rhinos. I could also feel the ground shaking from the stampede.

I decided positioned myself between two huge trees when the sun start setting. So I hope that none of the creature hit me here, or else I'd be dead. This whole stampede is the reason I've been feeling this way? I guess that makes sense.

With a little thought, I stop my action to light my torches just in case they see me. Thus I waited for a bit to see the so called 'stampede'.

Where does this road even leading towards?

I waited another few moments and it really paid off! The stampede that I was expecting were true, but it's not a rhino, it's more like a stampede of rabbits! This thing easily reach 1.5 meter tall, some of them were even more than 2 meters tall!

*How the f*ck could I even beat one of them!*

They seems to be in a hurry. So the 'presence' that I had all this time is because of this stampede?

That make sense but I can't help that I feel something's still coming here. Perhaps... Are they running from something?

Boom!

I heard a boom from where the rabbits are moving, reflexively turning upon my gaze, I see something descending from the sky.

“!”

The creature that descend from the sky is something that you would simply called a 'behemoth'. That thing reaches 10 meter tall, almost half of the forest trees. Its body were like a horse with shell in the rear back, has four legs, looking at it I think it could even pierce the hard and thick trunk of the giant trees. The face resemble that of a sea horse with a bend up neck almost as long as its leg. It descend using its dragonfly like wings stepping on the rabbits turning them to a blob of blood.

Shooting fire right out of its sea horse like mouth, every single one of the rabbits that come across immediately get turned to ash. It also getting hot around here, but I'm like 250 meter away from the initial attack.

Screech!

The 'behemoth' let out a screech and start marching toward the stampede of rabbits. The rabbits obviously had no chance of winning, yet they still try to attack the behemoth. With every single one of them that seemingly touch the behemoth skin was turned to ashes. It still impressed me that the rabbits have that much courage and it's also amazing that the rabbits could jump high enough to be able to reach the behemoth neck.

Cracks!

With the sound, a circle of fire appear around the behemoth. Every single rabbit that come through turns to ash, whether with or without jumping.

But rather thinking about that, it's time to make an escape plan! That thing IS the reason that I've been feeling this way. THAT thing is the presence that I've been cautious about. I have to get out of here!

<Proficiency Reached: Survivalist skill has Leveled Up to Lv.2>

<Force Activating Skill, Appraisal>

I don't know what's the system saying because I've started to run the other way, I'm not thinking of anything right now, I just want to escape from that thing!

<20... 19...>

Suddenly something appear in front of my vision, it's like a symbol full of encrypted texts.

<18... 17...>

I'm starting to feel the hunger, creep through me, I guess having a panic attack doesn't help that I've also yet to eat nor drink anything.

<16... 15...>

I've realize that the system is counting down something. The bushes here I tall. Why are you so tall! You're in my way! You know that right!

<14... 13...>

This encrypted text that just appear right in front of me is also not helping in any sort of way! This thing will just be a burden, a distraction! And now it starts to make an annoying noise!

<12... 11...>

Shut up!

<10... 9...>

<**Do You Want To Go Through The 'Tutorial'? Yes/No**>

What now! A new distraction reveal itself right in the middle of my vision! Get out of my way! I'm trying to run here okay!

<8... 7...>

Whoosh

I heard something's fly this way! Could it be that the behemoth now targeting me!

<6... 5...>

I've just realize what the message are saying... I don't have much time left, but better try first than just succumb to defeat.

“YES!”

<Entering the Tutorial>

<4... 3...>

I look up and see that the behemoth is really trying to chase me. My speed couldn't keep up with the huge body and wingspan of that creature and so I was caught up.

<2...>

The creature land in front of me with its pointy leg, ready to pierce me. I look at the creature one last time.

<One->

Suddenly everything turns black, it almost feels like the same feeling when I got sucked out of the class.

<Appraisal Result>

Hinomon, Anisopteragon Lv.29

Stats:

HP: 1910 / 2110 SPD: 550

ATK: 1145 DEF: 150

MP: 789 / 1505 SP: 629 / 1040

Avg. 1475

Skill:

Flame Shot Lv.3 Fire Skin Lv.3

Flame Aura Lv.4 Dragon Skin Lv.4

Flame Breath Lv.5 Night Vision Lv.8

<Proficiency Reached: Appraisal skill has Leveled Up to Lv.3>

<Teleporting individual...>

At that moment the ‘distraction’ that were obstructing my view expand, revealing about the now called ‘Anisopteragon’.

Is it some sort of a dragon?

As time froze, I couldn’t move any part of my body, the ‘dragon’ also seems unable to move. Am I safe?

The ‘dragon’ seems to be preparing some kind of attack, a breath attack. In fact, that breath attack was already launched at me, I’m literally seeing a ball of flame right in front of my eyes right now.

Anyway, the system said that ‘it’ will teleport me somewhere. Judging by me answering ‘yes’, it will probably teleported me into some sort of a tutorial room.

<Teleporting in 3... 2... 1...>

I hope this one is a little bit forgiving compared to what I’ve been experiencing up until now. This type of thrill is not my strong suit what so ever. Geez...

CHAPTER 2

A BRIEF EXPLANATION ABOUT THE SYSTEM

1

How long has it been?

I slowly open my eye, the woman seems to not be here. If I remember correctly, the main reason I passed out is because of that woman presence, but without her I'll probably be dead by now.

Before I passed out I heard the sound when 'they' clashed together. It sounds like a warzone, like a full on warzone. I hear fire crackling, explosion, blood splattering, skin ripping, screams, screeches, wind blowing, etc.

I'll say that I passed out about 1 minutes after their clash has begun. I was unable to open my eyes, nor move my body, so I feel just like a sack of potato. I could only hear what was happening, but that's enough for me to know that the cat was just a trap.

I think the reason I couldn't find any animals there, were because of the 'cat'. If I think about it, the 'cat' is small and unsuspecting, yet it feels like I was brought to the enemy trap. It also make sense as of why there's an underage girl body inside of a forest. The cat probably lead her here.

I was the same as this girl, naïve. The cat probably suspect that 'the girl' it bring were acting a lot different than before, so I cannot really say that my theory is 100% correct.

Anyway, I was too caught up in my own thought, I need to get up. I wasn't near a river anymore, it seems like someone move me over here. But I don't see any sign of life nearby. I guess I'm still in the 'cat' territory huh...

It seems the sun have come up. It seems like it's still in the morning so I have a lot of time to 'explore' this area. Also, I'm starving. Really starving. What should I eat? I couldn't find any food source. I need to save up energy while also trying to find some food in the process.

This is a tricky situation here. I could not just sit here, I need to eat, but it feels like I could only walk for about 1 minute before I passing out again. Even sleep takes some energy you know!

I find a nearby stick to support me while walking. I could still hear the faint sound of the river. So I decided to head back there to see the aftermath of their battle. But just when I thought that woman was gone,-

"I suggest you to not go there tho..."

Shiver

How?

I didn't sense anything, how does this thing sneak up on me so easily? I didn't even sense the movement of air, I also didn't hear anything.

"Calm down girl, I'm not trying to fight you or anything."

Hmm?

At least that's a good sign. I gather my courage to face this 'woman'. The voice sounds like a little girl, but I wouldn't dare call this thing 'a little girl'.

I turn back, I didn't see anyone.

"Up here!"

Why does this woman so enthusiastic to meet me?

I look up and see that the woman was sitting on a tree swinging her little feet back and forth as if it were waiting for me to wake up.

“I’m sorry if I sound rude, but could I know since when you were up there?”

She seems to think about something. Did say something bad accidentally?

“U-um... Nevermi-”

“Hahahahahaha!”

Why is she laughing? I tilt my head.

“?”

“Don’t worry about it. I think you were asleep for about 2 days. I was actually thinking are you gonna die, because you haven’t eaten anything yet.”

“Oh... I – I’m s-sorry about that.”

“Pfft!”

She seems about to break out laughing again. Is she always this nice to people?

Come to think about it, she was even nice to her opponent back then, it’s almost scary. What should I do? She said that I shouldn’t come to the river, am I just going to stay here until I starve to death?

At least if I come to the river, I could search for the cat remnant, if there’s any to eat left.

“I assume that you’re starving right?”

Nod

I nod in silence. This time the woman just smile at me. Stop it, its creepy dude. What are you going to do now? Eat me? No thank you.

“It only make sense I guess... Here, I’ll give you some food. You don’t have to pay me back. Because this is my master order.”

She pulls something from thin air, it looked like a well prepared meal. She threw the food at me. Then I catch it. It’s like a cup ramen. I could feel something’s slushing inside of it.

This thing's kinda heavy. I open it, and surprise-surprise, it's a full meal. I'm talking about rice, vegetable, meat, there's even some fruit. The soup is still quite hot.

"How?"

I said, full of question. First, how could she even pull this thing from empty air? Second, when did she cooked it? I didn't see any remnant or any trace of fire nearby.

"It's better for you to eat it right now before the soup is cold. I'll explain about it later."

"O-okay!"

I sit down then start eating the soup. It taste like porridge, but with some fruit in it. It certainly does not taste very great, but I still like it. Still better than nothing right?

While I'm eating, the woman seems to be enjoying herself. Is she just enjoying the scenery? I mean, it looks beautiful, but, do you have anything else to worry about?

As I thought about that, the woman stood up.

"Hey, mind if I leave you for a bit?"

"Hmm...? No, it's okay."

"Okay. I'll be right back. Wait here okay! Don't go anywhere."

With that the woman start to move. She's jumping from one tree to the other, it's like from the show Nar*to or whatever it's called.

I knew it. She's more skilled that she looks

Her movement is so fast and smooth, she makes it look like a walk in the park. With just a couple moment, she's already gone beyond the trees, I can't see her anymore. Well, I couldn't even hear her footstep in the first place, so I just depend on what I'm seeing.

I finished up my soup not long after she left. I was not stuffed, but neither to say, I was thankful for the meal she provided me with. Without it I'll probably die out of starvation.

She said that I shall not go anywhere and so I didn't go anywhere until she comes back. It's been about 3 hour since she left, the sun is almost at its peak.

If she comes back, what should I say to her? Should I question things in the first place? Maybe I just have to question her about 'that' then huh? Wait, do I even know what's her name is?

Let me just describe to you guys the appearance of this woman. The Woman has fair skin and scarlet eyes with flower-shaped pupils. She has long, mocha colored hair fading to crimson at the tips, which she seems to be super silky and smooth. She wears a pink flower shaped hairpin in the left side of her hair.

She wears a traditional crimson red kimono with a bright red obi. The obi has some sort of a fire patterns in its bottom part. The obishime was also colored a different shade of red and some sort of a fire emblem is used as the obidome of the kimono. I can't see what color is the obiage, but from the theme she has, is probably another shade of red. Overall the main kimono that she wears really symbolize a fire element. In addition, this woman wears a pair of white tabi with matching red blossoms on top her crimson red zōri strap.

I hope that sum it up to you guys. Her height is rather small compared to a usual woman her age. She's still taller than me, but it's not by a huge margin. Probably like 4-12 cm in difference, and don't forget that this isn't my usual body.

I'm still adjusting to this body, but I it's not a big deal, this is still a girl human body with less weight and just a bit shorter.

Anyway, I decided to just take a super short stroll, to get rid of my boredom. I try to climb the tree that the woman once sit at. This tree is not that tall so I could climbed it with relative ease.

When I reached the branch that she once sit, I've notice some sort of a small nest. This nest is similar to that of a bird nest. I try to reach the nest, but I'm too scared. If I fall, I'm worried that I'd break some bones in my body. It's not a long fall though.

You know what, because I decided to go this far, I might as well risk peeking what's inside the nest. It took me quite long to gather my courage, but at last I've finally manage to see what is inside the nest.

I don't know if my curiosity paid off. But what I'm seeing is rather unpleasant. For just me at least. It's a cat. Judging that I was nearly get killed by a cat in the last chapter, I'm currently second guessing myself, whether I should make some space or not. I still have some PTSD okay.

This one resemble more of a cat appearance than the last one though. It's still so small. It's a kitten! I can't help but grin at how cute it is. The kitten is currently sleeping in the nest. After admiring the cat, I jumped down just to be safe that the cat won't be attacking me.

If I were to remember, the last time, she said that she needs to find two 'ihito'. So, I guess she's currently fetching the other one. I wonder what 'ihito' means.

Wait, she said that I'm one of the 'ihito', or at least I could be one of the 'ihito'. If I classified myself as a person from another world, I could make an assumption that she's finding another person that was brought here with me.

It kinda make sense. It's not like just me that experienced it. The whole class crumbles down. It only makes sense that one or more people survive. I mean, look, I survive! I don't even have an amazing physique, yet I survive. Pretty amazing if I were to say to myself.

If I were to recall back, I have obtain a skill called 'Perseverance' and the title 'Ruler of Perseverance'. The title comes with 2 extra skill, 'Determination' and 'Unyielding'. If I were to make my own description about this skill, I assume that I'm basically immortal right?

I mean, look at it. Who needs Determination, Unyielding, and Perseverance on top of one another? With that much will power I could basically achieve anything as long as I intended it to be.

But seeing that I couldn't even have the courage of climbing a tree, I guess it doesn't work like that. Maybe it's just a little bit more complex than what I've been imagining this whole time.

Let's see... For example, I have a pretty high resistance to fear in my pervious world. I'd never been scared of any horror movies, or even haunted houses. Yet I was easily scared and even passed out by just the appearance of a girl. On the other hand, I don't have any will and motivation in my previous world. But, I gained a skill called perseverance, talking about irony here. I guess this world just giving me skill whatever it wanted it to be.

Talking about the world, I haven't hear 'The Voice of the World' talking for quite some times now. Usually I could still hear it even when I was vast asleep, like when I was getting transported here for example. But now, I couldn't even hear it. Does it have anything else to do?

I don't know for sure, but guessing that there's probably millions or even billions of people here in this world, the voices must been really busy all the time.

Oh yeah, I've also come to the conclusion that I've been teleported to another world, this is not my previous world. Well, I couldn't remember if there was a talking cat in my previous world, so, I concluded that this is a new world.

Anyway, it's been 4 hour now since she left. If she were really trying to find the other 'ihito'. That could probably mean that she'll be back late at night.

Why do I have a feeling like waiting for my parents to come home from work? I do feel like that though. She's not even my parent, nor do I even know her name, but I couldn't help to worry about her.

The weather today is great as per usual. I decided to take a short nap under a tree, hoping to not wake up late at night, or found myself in pieces, torn apart by some monstrous beast. The wind blows nicely making me fall asleep much faster.

...

I woke up about 1 to 2 hour later. I looked around to see if the woman has arrived. I couldn't find her. I guess she has not come here yet.

"Yahoo... I'm sorry, did I perhaps took too long?"

The woman greeted me. Honestly where are you? I could not even spot you just now!

"No, it's okay. I could take a short nap actually. I'm refreshed now!"

"Oh! I'm glad to hear that!"

"I'm also glad that you've come back safely. I'm sorry if I sound rude, but what are doing exactly to take such a long time to do?"

"Oh me? I was just trying to find some food for us. We're going to make a very long journey."

Long journey? Where are we even going? I could only think of one place. 'Out of the forest'.

She said that she's finding some food? To take that long to find some food. I guess there's really no animal worth killing here huh? But what about plant? There's a lot of vegetation here you know?

"Oh... Okay. I was planning to go outside this forest, but if you have other agenda, I'll gladly help. Oh, by the way, my name is Lia. Nice to meet you!"

"No, I was also planning to go outside of this forest. That's what my master said my job was. Oh yeah, the name's Inonami, nice to meet you too!"

"You don't have to be so formal all the time. Let's just be friends okay!"

This woman wants to be my friend. This clueless girl that was lost in the middle of the forest? Really?

"Uhm... Could I ask about the 'monster' that you were fighting the last time? Does it have any connection to the cat that was in the tree?"

I asked that to her while pointing the nest of the sleeping kitten on the tree.

"Oh. So you've noticed! That's great, I don't have to introduce you to it then. And about the monster that I fight last time, it's a long story. I'll be sure to tell you once we set foot on our journey. About the '*Felis Catus*' that were sleeping in the tree, that's the other 'Ihito', to make it simple, it's basically someone that you supposed to know."

"Someone that I was supposedly know?"

I was rather confused as of her statement. I'd never think that some of my 'friends' will literally turn to a cat. But after thinking it, I was turned to a female girl about 3-4 years younger than me, so it kinda make sense to have a chance being reborn as a kitten. But damn that's super unlucky man, to turn to something not even humanoid.

"When do we want to set our foot out?"

"I think it'd be best to do it once the sun start to rise. So I guess tomorrow."

"Tomorrow it is then!"

And so, we spend the rest of the evening talking out, telling jokes and that sort of stuff. Though, I must say that her jokes weren't the best, but I laugh nonetheless. We also have dinner, this time is like a steak with vegetables. There's no fries nor rice, just meat and vegetable. It taste great though. So I don't mind it! Thanks for the food!

At last I went to sleep. I'm trying to get enough sleep so I won't be a burden when we finally set our journey tomorrow.

...

"Yoohoo... Are you awake yet...?"

I was woken up by a soothing voice. I don't mind it at all, I was actually wishing that this girl was my mother. The way she wakes me up is like what you will imagine having a favorite onee-chan wakes you up. It's basically perfect. I ain't the type of person to swing like that, but I don't mind marrying this girl if that's the way she wakes me up every morning. Just saying.

Anyway, she already prepared some breakfast for me, the kitten also get some of the portion. I don't think that it will be a very good idea to feed a cat vegetable and fruit, but I ignore it nonetheless.

She ask me if I want to go to the river to wash myself, but I refuse. No, you guys will not get a descriptive explanation about me taking a bath you pervert.

After checking our stuff Inonami ask me if I could hold the cat for most of our journey. Because she's the one who carry our stuff, this is the least I can do to help her right now.

"Okay. Let's go!"

Nod

Thus we finally decided to make our way out of this cursed forest.

#

While we're walking, I asked Inonami a lot of things. She seems to not mind it, so I keep asking her a lot of question. The first question I asked is about a voice that seems to be inside my head, I'd like to know if this is normal or does anyone know about this 'voice'. I asked that to her, and she immediately answered me. To sum it up this is basically what she said.

In this world there's this thing they called World Voices, this 'voices' is the one who gift the inhabitants of this planet their skills and basic stats. There's actually a whole religion centered to praise the 'World Voices' hoping they could get a unique skill, but she said she's not going to explain that.

The 'World Voices' grant us in three different things, that is skills, basic stats, and leveling up. We could get skills by acquiring them with skill points, or we could work to get the skill we wanted. Skill points have a fixed amount since birth, thus saying for how much potential ones kid really are. When we want to use our skill points we have to speak to 'World Voices' personally. They use this thing called orb of resonance. From what she describe me, this orb will show a screen in our vision to select a skill we want to buy with our skill points. Skill point itself could also be seen with this orb.

She said that except from skill points, there's individual who have a special ability, some of them could even speak with the 'World Voices' without needing the orb of resonance, they were called voice whisperer. They said that their power work similarly as the orb.

The other method to acquire a skill is through our experience. For example, if we want to get a skill about farming, we could get it by farming a lot of things and as we become more accustomed to it, we will eventually have a farming like skill. Individual with skill outclasses anything without skills, for example we could be master at farming, but when we were faced with an individual that has a level 1 farming skill, we couldn't even compared to them. The same as having a level 1 skill and level 2 skill, although she said that a difference just one level in a skill is not that much, but when it goes 3 level above you have no chance of coming on top.

I then asked about leveling up a skill. She answered the same. It seems like we could also level up skill by using skill points or with the constant use of our skills. This is basically like enhancing skills in my previous world but with more technicality in it.

Out of nowhere she continued her rambling, I try to stop her but she said that I need this for my common knowledge. She said that if we want to activate a skill we can use different ways. The most simple is to chant the spell our self, but she said that not all skill can be activated by just chanting it. There're other method like a magic array but you need to know what rune you should write and what chant to activate the rune you've created. The last one is by creating a special connection to the 'World Voice'. Usually this 'special connection' is gifted when we were born, but she said that a super highly rank individual could make a ritual to have this 'special connection', the ritual is called 'Soul Integration Ritual'.

When a person does this ritual, there's a lot of benefit from it, the person becomes a 'voice whisperer' and also get a special connection to the 'World Voices'. This ritual needs a lot of requirements, the first one is that it could only be done with someone under the age of 18, second is that the person doing the ritual must have deep understanding about the 'World Voices', and the last one is that they have to make some sort of an offering to the 'World Voices' a soul offering to be exact.

I asked what kind of soul. Is it our soul or others? She then answered that we could use both, if we want to make an offering by sacrificing someone else soul, we need 1000-100,000 soul depending on our starting connection with the 'World Voices'. I was considered to be on the closer one, and if I

want to take this ritual I need exactly the minimum requirement of soul, 1000 soul. And if we want to offer our own soul, we must form some sort of a contract with the 'World Voices' as a substitute for the huge soul offering, and the more close we are to the 'World Voice' the less dangerous the contract is.

She also explain that there's some skills that does not need the use of activating. She called it passive skills, these skill consist of psychological and resistance type of skills, such as my determination skill that was derived from my 'Ruler of Perseverance' title. I do not need to chant anything to activate the skill because this skill will always be active. It's also the same as any resistance type of skill. But there's one rare active skill that doesn't need any chant, that's the appraisal skill. This skill does not need any chant to activate, rather it needs some sort of 'requirements'. She does not explain what are the 'requirements', she said that even she doesn't know the 'requirements'.

As she's done with her long and technical explanation, I let out a big sigh, I'd never thought that even in this world I need to study about this things. She seems to be quite amused by my attempt to understand what she have told me. It's already been 6 hour of constant walking, so we decided to take a lunch break.

"After this point we'll be entering monster free area."

"Huh? If that's the case, where are we currently?"

"Right now we're still in the Acnolings territory."

"Acnolings?"

"It's the creature you came across when you were sent here."

"So that thing is called the Acnolings?"

"Yeah, it's a part of the Dragon that takes control of this entire forest."

"A part of a dragon? Is it like a children or something?"

"Yeah, it's basically a children of the real dragon. The real dragon name was Acnologia. Dark Dragon Acnologia."

So that's why we still have not encounter any monster. So I have to be prepare to face of monster now? Oh god, this brings back my PTSD somewhat.

Before we leave this 'safe area' she continue her explanation, now about power system in this world. She explains that power were measured by the average ones stats in Atk, HP, SP, and MP. This explanation about stats is more complex and technical, so strap in.

First, measurable stats are stats that exist within the system, that means stats below (sub-system) and above (beyond the system) can't be measured. Other thing that can't be measured is something that does not pose a threat or an inanimate object that were made beyond the system.

Second, you can measure stats through a variant of the 'orb of resonance' called the appraisal stone. This stone works the same as the skill appraisal, but only the measuring part of it. While the orb of resonance is the connection with the 'World Voice'. Measureable stats have some properties like if someone has power/stats that are 1 whole digit lower than their enemies they basically have no chance of winning. To be more exact she did explain this; "You could still fight someone that has stats 1 digit higher than you but only if those 3 digit are less than five times your current stats. For example, let's say you have overall stats of 70. That means at most you could fight someone that has overall stats less than 350, anything more would be a death sentence."

You're saying that I have to use math in this?

Oh, there's also DEF stats, but I'm just gonna let you read what she just said to me, my brain is fried at this point.

"There's this thing called defense and armor, let's just call it DEF stats for short. Defense has the same points as armor, but you could only reduce armor points while defense stats stays the same. This DEF does some weird stuff to your attacks. This is from my own personal experience experimenting with monster in this forest, whether is that fighting them or make them fight against each other. It seems like when your attack is less than the enemy defense you could only do 1 damage to their armor, don't worry too much though because DEF stats usually far lower than enemy HP. But when your attack is at least the same or even more than the enemy defense, your attack will do 10% of their damage to reduce the armor and when the armor points reach 0 your attacks then goes through the enemy HP.

And for the DEF stats, it will reduce your attack power to the enemy by dividing their DEF stats by 10. For example your attack does 100 damage, and your enemy DEF stats is 100, then your attack does $100 - (100:10)$ damage to the enemy HP, and the 'armor rule' will not work on HP, it only works on armor, when your armor point is still above 0, and if the attack does not penetrate through the armor."

"Wait, you could penetrate armor?"

"Yes, there is actually attack that act like that. I called it armor penetration attack. And as you can probably see, this is a broken skill, that's why skill is very rare. A lot of people actually called this skill a Divine Blessing."

"I'm sorry, but can you explain what Divine Blessing is?"

"Sure, I'm also gonna explain to you about MP, SP, and disaster class because we're going to be in the monster free area. But let's talk about it while we're walking okay?"

"Sure, I don't really mind. I'm just rather uncomfortable because I make you talk too much. See, I'm a loner in my previous world, so I don't usually talk much, that's why I feel bad to make you talk so much."

"That's fine, this is my master request to give you a brief knowledge in this world!"

"You have a master?"

I've only just realized it now. I'm pretty sure she already tell me about her master before, but I must be occupied by something.

"Yes, but I must not talk about that. I'm sorry."

"You don't have to be sorry, I'm the one that has to say that to you."

After having a lunch break we head towards the border between the Acnolings territory and the free territory. As we walk she explains more about this world, this time is about MP and SP.

MP stands for Magical Points while SP stands for Stamina Points. She said that MP is used to conjure a spell and SP is used to make any physical activity like running, jumping, and fighting physically. The usage of MP and SP differ in every person. She said that if our MP reach 0 we could not use

any magic and we'll be very exhausted, and if we depleted our SP to 0 we will pass out. But if our SP and MP were 0, we'll die. Talking about scary.

Next she explain about Divine Blessings and surprisingly, this one is short. To sum up what she explains, divine blessing is basically a gift bestowed to an individual since born. You cannot obtain divine blessing by skill point or by experience.

Thinking back, Inonami said that armor penetration is a skill and not a divine blessing. Does that mean people from this world think that some obtainable skill are actually a divine blessing, because it is so hard to obtain?

I don't know and don't want to know the answer to be honest. My brain is in maximum overdrive right now.

We're approaching the border right now. It's not like a wall that separate the two territory. It's more like a change of color in the scenery. The Acnolings territory consist of dark leaves and trees. While the monster free territory were more green and forest like.

Speaking of arriving, the sun is already start to set. I guess we spend too much time in 'lunch break'. She initiated that we should camp here before entering the monster free territory. So I set my 'companion' (the cat) down and prepare a makeshift nest. Thus I started making it while Inonami makes us dinner.

Can I just point out how good my makeshift nest are? If I were this cat I'll bow to the person that make the nest. It looks so comfy! Even Inonami praise me on it okay!

We settle in for the night near the border. She told me that the monster free territory were about 10 to 15 times larger than the acnolings territory, so our journey inside of that continent will be 12 to 20 days! Well, I better prepare my mental health then.

Her cooking seems to be done. I didn't help with that because, well, I can't cook. My experience with cooking is just making cup ramen, and half of the time I even failed at it. So I just sit there waiting for onee-san to cook me a dish.

From what I'm describing to you guys, I'm basically a useless kid trapped inside a dangerous forest that somehow get saved by a wondering girl that looked like a Chinese vampire that apparently has a mission from her master to escort me out of this place. And that's true. I don't have any reasons.

Anyway, tonight dish is called 'rabbit mushroom skewered'. At least that's what she called it. Interestingly, this 'rabbit meat' she was calling has a texture similar to that of a steak.

"So yesterday you were asking about where have I been, right?"

"You know, I actually forgot I asked that to you."

"Hahahaha... Anyway, this is where I go to, yesterday."

"Here? Or beyond the border?"

"I'm sorry, I meant beyond the border. I went here because you know that there isn't any animal or prey to make food with."

"Yeah, I noticed it. So what you're saying is that, yesterday you went here to farm some food, then comes back to 'us' to feed us food in the same day?"

"Yeah. That's why it took a long time."

"No, it's okay. I'm rather quite impressed that you were able to make a 2 round trip like that in just one day. You must've been pretty fast."

"Oh yeah, once again, thanks for your hospitality. I'd never thought that somebody will come and save me from this forest. Now, after learning that this forest is far bigger than my imagination, I cannot express my thank you enough to you."

"No, it's okay. I've already said this, this is my master order okay?"

I truly believe that she's just using her 'master' to make an excuse. She's a really nice person. She could turn a shut in like myself to open up for her.

"Speaking of which, why hasn't the cat woke up yet?"

Yeah, that's right. The cat hasn't woke up yet through the whole journey. I was actually thinking that the cat might've been dead already.

"Oh. You don't know this but, that cat right there went through more hellish situation than you."

"This cat. Went through more hell than me? What exactly happen?"

"I don't know the details but. It seems like the teleporting process that the cat went through did not go smoothly."

"Actually, thinking back, my transporting process also didn't went that smoothly and I did feel a little bit nauseous when I was just sent here. I guess that means, the cat must've been through hell itself to get sent here."

"Exactly."

Oh no. Without me noticing, I was actually think out loud. This is embarrassing. I could feel my face is turning red right now. This is so embarrassing, I feel like I want to burry myself 5 feet underground.

"Are you okay?"

"Y-yeah... I'm okay."

Anyway, I have to digress from the situation before I literally died because of the embarrassment.

Before we went to 'bed', Inonami pulled something from thin air and give it to me. It's a sword, she said that it's to protect myself in the monster free territory, because there's no guarantee that she will be on my side all the time.

Nod

After nodding I open the sheath, beneath it is a golden blade. I quickly closed sword back in and say my thank you. I didn't have any experience fighting with a sword, but I'll take it just in case.

<Skill Granted: Swordplay Lv.1, the user have profound knowledge on swordplay thus enhancing ones attack when using a sword.>

We went to sleep rather late in to the night for some reason. That means that we woke up kind of late. At least, 'I' wake up kind of late. Obviously Inonami already woken up. She'd already have food prepared for us.

She's writing something in her notebook but I ignore her. Listen, I've just woke up, I don't want to bother with her yet. That's why I ignore her and just went straight in to eating the food she already prepared for us.

After I finished my breakfast Inonami then closes her notebook. She seems to be preparing for our departure to the MFT. What is MFT you say? Is an acronym for 'monster free territory', because the name is just too long for me and the author to write over and over again.

Anyway, I help Inonami packing our stuff. We don't really have that much stuff to begin with, so it would not take a long time either way. But I must help her nonetheless.

After we pack our stuff our journey began. To the MFT!

Well, we still have quite the way before getting there actually. To Inonami explain to me two more things. First is about individual level and average stat, the second one is about disaster class for monster.

First is individual level, in this world you need to raise your level to evolve and to raise your level, you need to kill a lot of monster. Interestingly killing human is the fastest way to level. After that, Inonami explain about average stats, average stats. Avg stats is what you can see when you use the appraisal stone. She said that you could use math to determine the DEF and SPD of enemy stats. To determine the enemy DEF points you basically divide the avg stats by 10 and assume that it still around about 50 points above that. And for SPD stats, you basically do the same as DEF but after that multiply it by 3. Damn, there's a lot of application for math in this world. I bet everyone here is really good at it.

Second thing Inonami explain to me is about disaster class. Disaster Class is something that people use to group up different type of monster by how many digit they have. The ranking goes from F to A then, A+, Special A, and at last is S. Where F-rank monster usually is harmless, E to D rank monster have avg. stats in one to two digit and does not pose a threat to human, C to B rank monster have the avg. stats from two to three digit and could be dangerous if they group up, A rank monster have avg. stats in the three digit and must be fought by a group of people minimum of 2, A+ rank monster is basically A rank monster but have avg. stats in high three digit,

Special A rank monster have stats in the 4 digit with sign of intelligence, and finally, S rank monster have avg. stats in high 4 digit sometimes even 5 digits and have the intelligence the same as humans.

She then explains that there is a much more powerful being in this world. Thus she makes her own ranking system for monster. She briefly explain that there's still some being that's more powerful that wouldn't even compare with the being that's in the chart. She makes a new disaster class from 1 star to 7 star.

She explains; 1 star is equal to E to D rank monster, 2 star is equal to C and B rank monster, 3 star is A to A+ rank monster, and 4 star is for Special A and S rank monster.

Then she give me some sort of a disclaimer that from now on every monster is classified as planet defying power. 5 star is a being that has avg. stats on high 4 digit up to 6 digit and could only be taken care of, if the whole world join forces. 6 star beings are ones that has avg. stats minimum at the 7 digit. 6 star being could only be beaten by another 6 star being.

Finally, 7 star being are ones who rival the system itself, the world might as well call them god. Like the system, their power are unimaginable. They could create their own unique magic outside of the system control. Without any restriction, their limit to their power is their own imagination.

That's what Inonami told me. Seems scary. Very scary.

But then she explain that with power like that, the chance of them emerging is slim. The system oversee the whole world, so if that kind of power exist, the system would quickly dispose them to maintain the balance between monster, human, and other races.

Anyway, we have arrived in the border between the acnolings territory and the MFT. Now I could really sense the difference between the two territories. Before, I could only see the change of color because we're on top of a cliff of some sort. Oh, I didn't mention that? I'm sorry then.

Now it's time to prepare. Wow, would you look at that. The cat actually woke up. It woke up! So it's not dead after all!

We've finally arrived at our first checkpoints. From this point on I'll be fighting a lot of monster. It's time to put my swordsmanship to work. I hope this time I could participate on taking care some of the monster that we're going to face. I do need to level up to you know.

I'm sure I will not survive just by avoiding danger all of my life. I need to get stronger. I'm determined to get stronger. At least until I found my answer to get back to my old world.

Why am I so pumped up you say? Nothing much, I'm just excited. It's only been three days since I got teleported here. But it do feels like forever. I do determined to get stronger. Because I don't want to depend on Inonami for the rest of my life. I may be a quiet kid, I may be listless and unenergetic, but I do have my own share of determination.

<Notice!>

<Condition met, the skill Determination show its compatibility with the user. Unlocking potential...>

<Skill 'Determination Lv.10' has become, unique skill 'Pure Determination'.>

Huh? What?

CHAPTER 3

WHY IS EVERYTHING HERE SO HUGE!

1

At last we're finally here. One thing to note immediately is that the atmosphere is way lighter. I asked Inonami about it, she said that the acnolings territory have dense atmosphere because acnolings were a high rank 3 star monster, and they're still just a baby therefore couldn't hold back their innate magical ability, raw prowess, and their aura.

We're just a couple minutes after entering this territory and we already see couple of animals. Most of them were harmless, but there's also some that were E rank. This feels like a school field trip if anything. But I nonetheless enjoys it. You see, unlike any normal school field trip, you don't really have to do anything here. There's no one that tell me to observe the surrounding and write down as many plants name in my book, or splitting our class to a bunch of group and have them do chores, all while the teacher just sit there and do nothing.

Right now we're just marching down this forest. The cat also walk along side us. This cat is rather intelligent, maybe it is someone that I knew all along, and after all I do know this aura. I don't know when I could sense someone else's aura (probably since you got teleported here you idiot), but I'm just going to ignore it for now. If anything, it wouldn't be a surprise that the cat was one of my classmate. Inonami certainly doesn't know that I was

a high school student right? My outfit probably give it away, but I doubt that she wouldn't even know what a normal high school outfit even look like.

Inonami said that we're just gonna ignore any monster that comes by without fighting. But if they're the one who initiate the fight first, we should not retaliate. Play it safe I see.

All this time, when we encounter a new type of monster Inonami would tell me the names and their estimated disaster rank. She's like a pok*dex in Pok*mon, explaining every monster we came across. But I'm more impressed on how much she could remember in her head. Is her whole life just memorizing? It's kinda scary. I doubt that a biologist in my previous world would even remember all the name of every animal in a biome with their complete classification.

Aside from the monster and animal that we are encountering while walking, the scenery here is the most beautiful so far. The air is refreshing. Is this what earth feels like back then, before we trample it with our thirst for technology and damaging it in the process by releasing carbon gas back to the atmosphere? I do want to feel what earth is like back then. But I guess this gives me a rough estimation.

As we proceed in further, the harder it is to navigate around. The root of the trees are getting bigger. I don't really know what cause it to grow like this. But I guess the more we approach the middle, the more nutrient content there is? But just in case I was wrong, I asked Inonami on it. Maybe she even know why. She seems to know anything so far, so here goes nothing!

"Hey I wanna-"

"Are you wondering why the plants are getting bigger?"

How could she even do that? How'd you know I want to ask that to you? I didn't even finish my question yet you dingus.

"To put it simple, the middle of the forest is a highly mana rich area. For what is mana, it's basically like an MP but in an atmosphere form. MP is the physical form of magic, while mana is the atmosphere/air form of it. Plants doesn't certainly need mana, but it will certainly grow much faster and bigger. Human also don't need mana, because they could generate it themselves from food. Just like you could regain

energy from sleeping. The only being in this forest who needs mana is a spirit and fairy. They're like mini light particle, usually they don't show themselves but sometimes they do when they're sucking the mana from the air."

There she goes again with another long explanation. This time about mana, fairies, and spirits!

Anyway, that answer my question. So I was kinda wrong. Fine I'll admit it, mostly wrong. Though I was right on the 'approaching the middle gets more nutrients' part okay?

Damn, this route is getting harder to track around. My shoes is getting worn of super quickly. My hair and my clothes are also a mess. I couldn't found any spot to take a break. Everything here is so between rough, too big or just too uneven to comfortably sit on. Although, my leg hasn't given up on me yet. I'm quite surprised.

Despite the ever increasing difficulty to track around, the scenery is just getting better and better. It makes me think twice whether or not I should complain or be grateful. I also wonder on how could my 'possibly a classmate' be turned into a cat. Is this some sort of a punishment from the world, to transform a human into an animal?

But it seems like the cat is fine right now. It's currently following right beside Inonami right now. I guess sleeping does gives you a boost, you damn cat!

Anyway, because I'm on the back right now, I could get some privacy. First, I'm going to talk about my skill evolving to a unique skill. What does that even supposed to mean? No, I will not talk about this to Inonami. I don't want to bother with her right now.

I actually want to see if I could talk to the 'World Voice'. I wonder how could someone that has special connection with the world voice do it. Is it just like calling a friend?

Hey world voice!

How's your day?

Maybe the world voice has a name?

Connor. Jessica. Tanner. Sophia. Isabella!

Jasmine. Andre. Jamal. Dominique. Raven!

It seems like calling it doesn't work. I must not give up yet. What does my 'Pure Determination' skill means if I'm just going to give up after a couple of failed attempt?

Hey voice. What does it means to have a unique skill?

<Notice. Unique skill is an evolved form of normal skill. Unique skill does not have any level, rather it is a skill that will evolve alongside the user. If the growth rate of the user is fast, the skill growth rate will go as fast, and vice versa>

Hey! The voice responded to me! Why did it respond just now? I've tried that question before. Perhaps, maybe it needs more information on whether or not I'm calling the voice or just messing with my mind.

Hey voice. What does 'pure determination' skill does?

<Notice. Skill, pure determination, not found. Finding other alternatives>

Huh?

<Found. Unique skill; 'Pure Determination', is an evolved form of the determination skill. After the user of skill determination proof its compatibility with the skill, it will evolved to unique skill pure determination>

Oh, I forgot. It's a unique skill now...

That's a broad answer. Maybe it has some sort of a dictionary? If that's the case, I could just ask any skill then the world voice will just describe it to me?

Hey voice. What is determination skill?

<Notice. Skill; Determination is a skill obtained by only special individual that has high determination within them>

That's... Not that helpful is it? But wait. You basically tell me how to get the determination skill just now? Wait. Wait. Wait

Hey voice. How to obtain appraisal skill?

<Notice. Skill; Appraisal, are obtained by a unique individual that has the capability to store vast amount of knowledge and able to share it with others. The user must've been trusted by the system itself>

Wait...

"U-um... Inonami-san?"

"You could just call me Inonami you know? What's the matter?"

"I've been wondering, you seems like a normal girl. But it seems like you've been walking on this planet for a long time."

This is just to get Inonami attention.

"Perhaps, I've been living for thousands of year now."

What? I didn't expect her to say that. My original plan was to ask if she has the appraisal skill. I didn't expect this.

"O-oh! You're not a human? Or perhaps human have a long lifespan here?"

"Hmm... I don't know whether or not I should give you the answer."

She looked super confused right now.

"U-um... Can I know what your master had instruct you to do?"

If this is a sensitive topic that even she hesitate to answer, I should not push this matter. That's why I asked that.

"My master instruct me to tell you everything about this world that I know, protect you from injuries or even death, and give you an answer to everything you ask me. What's with the sudden change in question?"

"N-no... Here's the thing, I permit you to not answer a question if you don't want to. I just want to know if you have an appraisal skill or not. Because you seems to know a lot of thing about this world."

"Oh... thank you. If that's the case, I should apologize first, that I can't answer your previous question. For the second one about appraisal, I do have the appraisal skill. Though my master said that I should give you information about this world according to my memory and not through the appraisal skill."

"Oh... Okay. You don't have to be so formal all of a sudden. hehe..."

I let out a quite nervous laugh. I basically almost ruined her identity. Though with that I know that she had the appraisal skill. That make sense why she knows a lot of things.

Oh yeah, I should inform Inonami that I apparently have a special connection to the system.

"Umm... Inonami."

"Yeah?"

"Just a few moments ago I was experimenting with myself about the world voice. It seems like I have the 'special connection' that you've told me earlier."

"Oh yeah?! Let me check."

"Hmm... I suggest you to not that again. It seems that you are actually using the perseverance skill. Perseverance is a skill that could grant you anything if it's still within the system in the cost of your HP/MP/SP/and even LP, which stands for Life Points."

"Wait, does that mean I'm using my MP? Did I use any other of my stats?"

"No... It seems like perseverance skill only consume what's necessary for the activation. For example if you were to activate berserker skill using perseverance, it will use your SP and MP but if you activate blood sacrifice skill using perseverance, it will use your HP, MP, and SP. It seems like your communication with the world voice only spend your MP. You shouldn't do that anymore. Your MP and SP is very close to zero right now."

Scary! So basically what you're saying is that I almost die?!

"O-okay!"

Because my SP is about to ran out. We decided to settle in for today. I only want to help, it seems I've become a burden again.

We choose an enclosed space between 2 trees. Surprisingly, this spot is rather comfy. Inonami is preparing us a meal for dinner. For right now we're just snacking on some snacks that Inonami apparently have in her pocket this whole time.

It's not night time yet, but the sun will soon start setting. Now we're just waiting until we're consumed by our sleepiness and falling asleep. In fact, the cat is already vast asleep. We didn't even have the time to make its nest.

We eat dinner when the sun sets. This time she calls it 'Rabbit stew of Determination' with her tongue sticking out like its mocking me. It worked though. I feel like I'm attacked right now.

I finally decided to sleep some moments later. It seems like Inonami will be staying awake for some more. Anyway-

"Goodnight!"

"Night!"

...

Thud thud thud

In the middle of the night I was woken up by a sound. It sounded like a bunch of monster were coming over here.

"You should not worry about that sound."

I lifted my gaze upward and sees that Inonami still awake, and as per usual, she's on top of a tree.

Step

She stare at me for a couple seconds, the she step of the tree and landed beside me. She then whisper;

"It seems that we're surrounded by monster. For right now, you just have to go back to sleep, you haven't fully recovered your MP and SP yet. It seems that they will not attack unless we make a sudden movement or loud noises."

“What happen if they attack while we’re sleeping?”

“You will be the one who's sleeping. I have a lot of SP and MP left, therefore didn't need sleep right now. Don't worry about it, I'll protect you and the cat at all cost. Trust me here, this is a job my master bestowed upon me.”

“Okay then. I wish that you don't have to fight right now. Let's fight it together tomorrow okay?”

Nod

She gives me a nod and a thumbs up for extra measure. I don't know why, but it seems like this is her final moment. But because I'm super sleepy I went back to sleep without second thought.

...

“Now-now... It seems like we've been trapped by the enemy huh?”

“Bring it then. Rabbits!”

“Right now I'm in the middle of an important job. You guys should be proud, I'll let you all a quick and painless death tomorrow!”

#

The sun is starting to rise up and I'm already awake. The cat is still sleeping, but we make sure that we don't make any movement that will anger the monster that was on standby. We also make some sort of a strategy. I make sure that I will participate in this fight. Let's just say that this is my practice round, why did I say practice round you say? Well, it's because Inonami must kept me alive while I'm inside of this forest. So I could battle with ease. I'll make sure I do not bother Inonami, I'll try.

Inonami explain to me more about my perseverance skill. So basically this skill could grant me anything at the cost of that particular spell/magic activation requirement as Inonami said before. This time she explain that I'll need much more MP to activate a normal spell, for example a basic level 1 fire magic would cost 10MP but I'll need 18MP. She doesn't give me an exact number, but I'm just going to say it's a 2x multiplier for the consumption. She also explain that I need to be determined to activate the skill.

Finally, she give me an information about my own stats. This is what she basically said:

Lia ***, Human Lv.2**

Age : 10 years

Stats :

HP: 80 / 80 SPD: 35

ATK: 55 DEF: 10

MP: 66 / 67 SP: 71 / 71

Avg. 68

Skill:

Title:

Perseverance

Swordplay Lv.1

Ruler of Perseverance

Pure Determination

Unyielding

She told me that my stats are rather high despite my age being 10. A normal human child stats would be on the 10 and a prodigy would be 20 that's at the age of 8. Human usually would explode when they pass age 10, and at the age of 20 their stats would be around 150. She said that I was above average. That does make me happier though.

Anyway, the plan was to make them fight us one by one so it's a little bit easier for me. Now Inonami is trying to see if anyone of them is an easy target for me to test my power.

She shoot out some sort of fire attack at one of them. Soon after, one of them is really running out this way. I was surprised 'it' didn't call for backup. Does it think that one would be enough to stop me? Well let's find out then.

This voice is me using my voice transfer to you.

What? How? Apparently she does have tricks up her sleeve.

Okay!

I can finally see the monster.

Huge!

It's a rabbit, but huge. Super Huge.

"Okay. Get ready."

"Okay."

Couple moments later the rabbit jump. Inonami use another fire magic to shoot it down.

Here you go!

She then push me signaling to engage in combat.

I pull out my sword and start running at the rabbit.

The rabbit put out the fire and change its gaze towards me this time.

Without any delay I make a gesture to swing my sword to see what the rabbit will do.

The rabbit jump backwards, increasing our distance.

Careful, it's going to use wind magic.

Okay!

I find the nearest tree to hide and quickly climb it. Sure enough, the roots and grass at the area I was on was cut to pieces. That's scary! I'll be turned to mincemeat!

Hey voice. Can you help me closing my gap between me and the rabbit?

<Notice. Using skill: speed, to increasing movement speed for 10 seconds>

That should be enough for now.

I quickly ran to the rabbit. It seems like it was surprised.

The rabbit jump behind me and start to charge forward. Its movement were fast, and every step this thing take, it shake the ground ever so slightly.

The rabbit was charging at me mouth fully open. I take a step back.

Hey voice. Activate skill Swordplay!

<Notice. Skill; Swordplay activated>

With that, I jump forward to the rabbit and start slashing its neck.

Rabbit quickly lift its back leg and kick me. I was launched 10 meters back and began stumbling down. Luckily, my reaction time was enough to defend the kick from hitting me directly.

I quickly stand up and run towards the rabbit again. But with its neck bleeding, the rabbit were unable to freely move. It's seems like the rabbit was having a hard time breathing. Because I slash its neck, it also seems like it cannot call for help. At last I decided to stop attacking.

<Notice. Skill; speed duration has expired.>

Take that you dingus!

Nice. Good Job!

Your HP went down by 15, MP went down by 10, and SP went down by 11. According to my calculation, you could defeat 5 to 6 more rabbit.

How many rabbits are out there?

About 2000...

I'm dead. What the f*ck is that number!

Don't sweat it. The rabbit here were consider a solid B- (minus) rank monster okay. No 15 year old would be strong enough to beat one usually. But I believe that you could beat more of them.

Okay, I'll do 2-3 more fights just to be safe.

Okay.

A couple moments' later 2 rabbits were heading towards me.

I thought were going to fight one on one

Yeah, I'm gonna test you. Are capable of defeating two at the same time?

Fine then you dingus!

The two rabbits jumps at the same time. Because they're rather far away I have 1 to 2 second to dodge. I decided to jump to my right and regain my stance.

Hey, can I know their weak spot?

Nope. Solve that on you own.

Thank you! Fine, I'll do it myself.

One of the rabbit quickly charges at me, and it seems the other one was preparing a magic spell. I decided to tank the charge. Suddenly, the rabbit that were charging at me jump up leaving me and the one who's charging a spell.

Sh*t, I didn't expect this type of cooperation in battle from a rabbit! The rabbit that were charging at me are now charges at me again, but from the back.

"I guess they're still an animal" I muttered.

I predict the casting time of the rabbit that was preparing a wind magic attacks at me. Still locking my eye to the rabbit that was charging, I prepare to jump to the tree a couple meter next to me.

Hey Voice. Make me jump to that tree!

<Notice. Using skill: jump boost, to increase jump power for 5 seconds>

I waited for another second and the jump towards the tree.

Sure enough, the wind magic was casted. The rabbit that was charging at me are hit by the wind attack. With no way to dodge that, the wind attack hit the rabbit straight on its face and the rabbit starts to tumble down. I guess its dead now right?

Is that thing dead?

Sure is!

Okay, thank you for confirming.

One down, one more to go!

I immediately jump to the rabbit while still having the effect of jump boost. I landed right in front of the other rabbit and start to stab it right away.

The rabbit jump back before I could take one hit and starts to run away.

I follow it, but it seems rather strange that it doesn't move faster than me, it's almost feels like it was luring me somewhere.

I stopped. It seems like it was luring me to the rabbit that I once slice its neck. What is it trying to do? A rabbit with its neck bleeding out like that wouldn't be able to survive for much long.

Get out of there, they're trying to do a dual attack.

What? They could do that?

Without any second thought I take cover.

Still not far enough.

What? How far? This is already more far than when I was dodging those wind attacks. I decided to keep running from trees to trees just to keep extra measure of I was not far enough.

Without really realizing, I was running towards Inonami.

Sh*t

Immediately after I knew that, I turn back and start to run the other way.

I know that I've make a huge mistake by doing that. Thus the 'dual attack' slightly graze my back when I was still running. I stumble forward. I could feel that my back is burning right now.

It sounded like another wind attack was launched towards me, but that sounded way more violent than the first one. So they did do a dual attack huh?

Hey, can I know how the dual attack work?

Sure. But are you sure I will not be in your way? Can you really focus on me telling you stuff while you're in the middle of the battle?

I'll try.

I started to run at the two rabbit while Inonami is explaining how the dual attack work.

Hey Voice. Make me Fast!

<Notice. Using skill: speed, to increase movement speed for 5 second>

I run around circling the two rabbit from a safe distance trying to find their weak spot, because Inonami don't want to tell me apparently.

Because I was just running around, I could also focus on what Inonami are saying.

Dual attacks are only possible if the two person that was doing it have the same magical abilities and the same elemental compatibility. This abilities is good to use, but at this time it's a risky move becau-

So basically the dual attack will only work if they have the same magical abilities and elements.

Just when she's done explaining that part, I charge forward because there's only one second left on my boost. I quickly stab the rabbit that was already wounded.

I said, it's a risky move because the MP consumption will increase. Because the rabbit that's wounded have little SP and MP left, they do a dual attack as a last ditch effort to take you down. Now, the rabbit that you've stab is already dead you know?

Sh*t. I didn't hear that part!

I let go of my sword and jump back. The rabbit uses its paw to pin me down. But I quickly dodge it with relative ease.

Hey Voice. Put some power to my punch!

<Notice. Using skill: iron fist, to increase punch damage for three strike>

Thank you perseverance!

I immediately punched the rabbit twice before it start to run away again.

I grab my sword back and this time observe.

Inonami. How many times left could that thing use its skill?

About two more times because of that dual attack.

Okay. Thank you!

According to my calculation, I've used about 30 or so MP from the start and about 20 SP excluding the iron fist skill.

Without me wanting to spend my MP again, I charge forward as fast as possible. It looks like the rabbit is trying to cast another wind spell at me.

I kept on charging without a care about the wind spell that was going to hit me, hoping that I could land a strike before the rabbit finish casting.

Apparently I was wrong. The rabbit finish the cast right in front of me. I could see the wind spell is forming through a space between me and the rabbit.

Sh*t. Getting hit by a spell that could kill its own kind in one strike at point blank range like this is basically a death wish.

I quickly swing my sword at the rabbit. But our attack hit at the same time. At least that's what it feels like.

I was in so much pain right now. It feels like my head had split in two. I resist the urge to scream my lungs out. I wasn't panicking, but I am in so much pain right now. But I persist to stay awake. At least until the enemy is sure defeated.

Hey, if you're still awake punch the rabbit one more time. It's SP and MP were basically 1 at this point. It couldn't move a single inch, but it could still call for help.

I don't know why you don't just finish it yourself. But I still want to get the kill credit. I crawl my way to the rabbit and take a good punch at the already immobilize fallen rabbit.

<Proficiency Reached: Swordplay skill has Leveled Up to Lv.2 >

Hey! My sword skill leveled up!

I don't know why, but my last attack seems to do more damage than the previous one. I don't care about that right now, I have to heal myself

somehow. My clothes are also turned to smithereens thus revealing my small petite body.

I've now just realize that I was not put in someone else body. I body was just shrunk back to my ten year old self. That's why I adjust to it quite quickly. And it also explain why I was brought with my school uniform. Though it doesn't explain why this uniform still fit me even when my body shrank down.

I'm basically naked right now. If anyone of you is turned on by this, just know that the FBI is in your way right now.

Anyway, it seems my body heals on itself I don't know why. It's not the type of healing where your body reconstruct itself or even close the wound. I could still see a lot of wound in my naked body right now it's nauseating to be honest, but I could walk normally without any pain.

I walk my body and grab the sword that was still planted on the rabbit body then start to make my way towards Inonami.

Grumbles

Just when I think the battle was over I hear a lot of monster start marching towards me.

Inonami quickly jump to me and pick me up. She then put me right beside the cat and put a barrier that also seems to heal me right away.

"From now on let me take care of the rest. You did a good job!"

"Thank you." I muttered.

I could see my wound is healing up. Though my body are still naked.

I saw Inonami taking off.

She jumped off the tree and start to chant some sort of magic.

"Flame Wall!" She screamed out loud.

Is she trying to attract all the monster?!

Soon after a wall of flame surround us about 15 meter in radius. The wall is super bright, it's a 20 to 30 meter wall made out of flame. Then rabbits soon march towards us.

I see a lot of rabbits were burned to ashes. I also realize that every single one of them is huge! I thought that what I was fighting were their boss.

There's no way I could beat all of them. How strong is she?!

I sit here in awe, watching her killing all the rabbit as easy as just standing still in one spot. She's like the monster of monsters.

Is she even human? She did stutter when I asked her that...

"Wall Down!"

Eh..? Why did she do that? The rabbit are making their way here super-fast you know? In fact they're already here. It doesn't seems she's in trouble though, right now she's just punching and kicking them without much effort but they're all turned to mush when came in contact with her.

After just a couple moment of punching and kicking, the rabbits start to retreat. I, myself, would just dip out right after seeing what she's capable of. I didn't blame the rabbit to start retreating. In fact I'm kinda glad.

Man, seeing her power is like that, I was thankful that she's on our side right now. If I were to see her as a monster I had encounter on the way out of this forest, I'd just pray that I would not be sent to hell.

Not long after that whole situation she comes back to see me.

"You sure not to kill all of them?"

"It will be troublesome to mess with the population of this forest any more than this. If the food chain were broken, the monster would find their way out from this forest and mess with the human."

"Oh, I see. That makes sense."

According to my calculation, she killed more than 200 rabbits just now. At the time it took me to kill the three rabbit, she already kill around 150ish.

Most of the time is just because the rabbit that weren't coming out fast enough. That's a flex right there.

It may seem long. But to kill those three rabbits, I only need around about 3-4 minutes. That's minus the waiting time until the second and the third rabbits show up.

Anyway, she actually offer me a clothing that she brought here in case I needed one. How prepared is she? She really does have everything in that pocket dimension of hers.

"Thankyou"

"You're welcome."

Now you guys won't be able to fantasize about my naked body anymore you pervert!

I put the clothes on. It looked like a traditional Scotland outfit. Red striped skirt? Pants? I'm pretty sure it's called kilt, with matching shirt and a semitransparent cape that she said will protect me from the heat and cold. There's also a hat with horns on it, I think it's a little cute not gonna lie.

Anyway, it seems my HP already healed. But my SP and MP has not increased much.

"It seems that I cannot afford to walk today. I'm sorry."

"It's okay! You did great! Oh yeah, you don't have to compare yourself with me. You see, a lot of my skill is an area of effect skill."

"No, I wouldn't even dare (LOL). I know that you're just that much stronger than me. I want to ask though, why is it when I fought one of them is a lot easier than when I fought two at the same time?"

"You see, this is why they're called a C to B rank monsters. It would be so much difficult to face them if they're in groups."

"Oh yeah... You actually tell me about this before right?"

"I did. I didn't think that you would listen to be honest, but thank you nonetheless."

“I should be the one who say thank you to you, you know?”

“Well then. Let’s just forget about it.”

We all then laugh.

Well, at least the rabbit problem was solved for now.

I don’t know why, but the cat is still sleeping. Didn’t you hear the rabbit screeching in pain just now? Honestly, how the heck are you still sleeping?

Not long after, I ask Inonami why everything here is so huge.

She then answer that she doesn’t even know. But she does have a hypothesis. She said that it’s just natural selection. With the trees getting bigger, the harder it is to reach the leaves.

Herbivore like that rabbit eat the tree leaves which have more mana. Thus giving them bigger body and stronger physique. The rabbits that have weaker and smaller body become an easier target for predator, thus leaving them with no chance unless if they grow their body.

We then settle here for another night because my SP and MP ran out again. We didn’t talk much, she’s seemed to be talking to herself right now. Let’s see what she’s up to!

INTERLUDE 1

THE FLAME GIRL SOLILOQUY

1

"That girl, Lia, is special. She could kill 3 of the 'Star Rabbit'. Not to mention she basically fight 3 of them at the same time.

She could already make use of her perseverance skill like it's her own arm. Although the cat, I don't know if I pick the right one. If I were to mess up, my master will be disappointed with me.

The cat does have a unique skill at least. For a monster that's just a couple months old, that's super amazing. The 'Envy Skill' is a skill that could steal another ones skill but you have to know what skill you want to steal. That type of skill is a game changer. But, one downside to it that, every one of the 'Seven Deadly Skill' will have an effect at the user mental and psychological health.

There is one thing to be considered of. My master said that I also have to train both of them. That make sense now. I have to train Lia how to unlock the full potential of her perseverance skill. But how do I even begin to teach the cat?

Could the cat know what I'm saying? I don't know whether or not I could do telepathy to the cat. If the cat were intelligent enough I'm sure that I could. But the only way to find out is to let the cat use telepathy on me.

I could try to communicate with the cat first using telepathy, but if the cat cannot decipher my telepathy, it will just came out as an unpleasant noise in the cat mind. Possibly driving the cat to madness.

Our journey will take about 1 to 2 months. At that time I have to train the both of them to utilize their skill fully. I also planning to give them a map and knowledge about the world itself. The system is something, but the world is another topic to discuss about.

Anyway. Let's talk about how she kill those rabbit from my point of view. At first I was hesitating whether or not I should really leave this job to her. When I saw her first attack I can't really think why she did that. It seems pointless, the star rabbit could only charge, jump, and does wind attack.

I know that she doesn't know that, but at least she could tell by the physique of the rabbit right? Maybe I just have to give her some slack. She's only 10 years old. After the first attack the rabbit jumps back, I give the warning to stay away from the wind attack and she did listen.

Her next move was the one that surprise me. She uses her perseverance skill to give her a boost in movement speed. It's not fast, but it's fast enough to give the rabbit a surprise. Because the rabbit jumps back to prepare for charging, she take the time to activate her new swordplay skill using perseverance, then swing her sword in the rabbit neck. That right there, needs some appreciation. She did use her perseverance skill rather than just her stats, but I cannot blame her because she can't monitor her stats, the rabbit stats, and its weaknesses. She need to go all out.

Then two star rabbit come towards her. Her stats were still pretty high but I was getting worried. Even a 20 year old with average stats wouldn't even be able against two star rabbit at the same time. I was kinda right though. She finishes one of them pretty fast. But, not killing the one before the two rabbits comes out is her blunder.

She got hit by a dual attack, luckily it only scrape her back. She uses her perseverance skill again to finish it off. But at last, she traded blow with the rabbit powerful wind magic, tearing her body apart. Her attack were powerful, but she's basically dead. Luckily her unyielding and determination skill that was derived from her title save her, leaving her with only 1 HP remaining.

When I hear the other rabbit were making their way here I hurriedly pick her up and encase her within a barrier I made with the purpose to heal and protect her. This barrier is enough to withstand a direct attack from a high 3 star ranked beast.

I jumped out to face the rabbits. I set up a flame wall to hold them out for a few moment while thinking of a strategy to make this end quickly.

After some thoughts I decided to just massacre their kind in front of every one of them, hoping I could scare them away using my brute force. It eventually worked out after killing around 200 to 250 of them.

Now... What could I do to make Lia more powerful? Surely I could think of something after seeing her fight right?

Well... I could train her physical abilities and raise her stats. Let's see... what is the fastest way to level up again?

Wait... perhaps I should make her stats go up without her leveling up. Level up meant that if you have a stat, it will multiply. That means if the starting stat is already high, no let's say it's basically maxed. By leveling up, her stats would grow exponentially. Thinking of it, this is also how master trained me. Okay then! Let's use that method!

Now... How could I use that method? Back then my master train me by carrying some weight, using my skill nonstop, and even using my own skill against myself to raise my resistance stats.

One of my skill is gravity magic. Let's just use that!

But now, I need to hunt for food. My stock is running out, so I need to hunt more. Hmm... What should I hunt though? I guess let's just see what kind of monster I came across this time."

When I walk toward their makeshift tent I stumble across her. It seems like she's listen in on my soliloquy. Well whatever...

I tell her that I was going to hunt. I settle another barrier to protect her. Then I quickly ran off.

And that's the end of my soliloquy. I hope I could really get Lia and the cat to be a strong duo. I was also planning to do the same training for the cat. Though I really need to know is the cat the one I was looking for. I hope that I could find it out soon.

CHAPTER 4

CAT TALK WITH INONAMI AND ME

1

Dangit!

I could not listen in on her! As I was just approaching her, she spotted me right away! I could only hear that she's preparing some sort of training for me and the cat. I'd never thought that the cat would also get a training program.

Anyway. She told me that she's going to another hunt again to find some food for us. I guess she's not as prepared as I was imagine. She prepared another barrier and I immediately go inside of it. You see, I still need to recover my SP and MP. That's why I immediately go inside the barrier. To be honest, I don't really know why she even took down the barrier in the first place. But she could do whatever she want, so I don't blame her.

Okay, right now it's time to evaluate how my battle goes. The rabbit that I was fighting was intelligent enough to cooperate to defeat me. I guess they develop that technique because their way of fighting in group.

If I remembered, I spot that one of the rabbit weakness is really their throat. When I saw Inonami fight, the screeching sound of the rabbits that were giving warning and war cries are painful to hear. So targeting their throat so that they could not call for reinforcement is the best thing you could do.

Knowing that I was fighting a C rank monster at the very least, it was rather lucky that I survive. Especially when I took that wind spell straight on ahead, point blank range from the enemy, I should've been dead by then.

Next time when I happen to fight the rabbit again, have to make sure that one; I have to finish them quickly, two; if I couldn't finish them quickly, I need to silence them before they call out for help. I guess this will work with any type of monster that fight in group like the rabbits.

It started to rain in the forest. The smell of burnt blood and the massacre were now starting to dissipate and getting mixed in by the smell of the soil getting wet. The forest become so foggy when rain pours. I couldn't see more than 10 meter in front of me. Good thing that Inonami set this barrier up. If not were going to be soaking wet and also have the chance to get attack by a monster.

The air is chilling, but it's not in a bad way. It feels like you're on top of a mountain, 6 AM in the morning. It's breezy and just refreshing. Just cause of curiosity, I take of my semitransparent rainbow cape, and it does seem to get a lot colder. So this semitransparent rainbow cape that's made out of some kind of plastic is actually working? That's bizarre, if you see this, you wouldn't think that this kind of item will work. But it does! I guess this is some kind of magic?

Anyway, while enjoying the scenery I'm actually sipping a cup of hot water right now. How did get hot water you asked? Well, it seems that my sword have fire magic implanted in it. How do I know you asked? I asked the world voice of course. I asked it what is the stats or the information about the sword, but in the end the most valuable information is that this sword could create fire.

So with that, I gather some small wood that was chipped by the rabbit wind attack and use them as a fire wood to heat up a water. I don't have a tea, so I couldn't make one okay! If I could I will!

Right now I'm just relaxing, leaning towards the wall of our makeshift tent, legs stretched out, arm holding the cup of hot water to keep it warm, etc. I notice that the cat is waking up.

Really?!

You really just wake up now? What is wrong with you? What if we decided to keep walking today? You would be here, alone, all by yourself you know that right?

Saying that, Inonami probably order me to bring the cat with us despite any situation. If I couldn't, then she'll probably do it by herself.

Anyway. The cat are now awake, it is still a cute cat. I'm not a cat person, but I'll admit that this cat is rather cute compared to the rest I've seen in my previous world.

The cat walk towards the edge of the barrier staring at the outside for a couple of moments. Then it walk towards me. It seems like it want to snuggle with me. This situation is rather familiar. In fact this situation is bringing my PTSD.

I pushed the cat away signaling that I don't want to snuggle with it. Inonami said that this cat is someone that I should know. Who is it? And how could I possibly know if you're someone I know if you couldn't even talk. I inspect that cat to at least try to recognize something about it. In the end I couldn't find any sort of hint about who's the cat originally.

Fine then, I don't know what my MP is but here goes nothing!

Hey voice. Tell me who this cat beside me is originally!

<Notice. Individual: Cat, not found. Finding other alternatives>

What do you mean not found? There's only one living thing beside me-

<Notice. Individual: *Felis catus*, found. Origin of this *Felis catus* is something beyond the system. The *Felis catus* is considered as an unknown guest. Information limited. Need higher authority.>

What? That's the first time the world voice cannot do what I say. The world voice also seems to be talking about this 'unknown guest' when I was teleported here. It also mention about 'system' and stuff.

The fact that Inonami haven't tell me this meant that either she doesn't know what is the system, or she doesn't want to tell me yet. You know what, she probably doesn't want to tell me that by just judging from her personality.

Because the world voice doesn't seem to know who this cat is, I just need to be patient for now. There is one way that I could think to know who's this cat really was. That's to evolve it so it can talk. But one problem, I don't know if this cat has an evolution or not. If the cat could really evolve, then could it evolve so it can eventually talk.

I'm getting a headache just thinking about it now. The cat is looking at me, what does it want to do? The cat is starting to open its mouth. Is it yawning? No. It doesn't seem to be yawning. It's almost like it was trying to... Talk?

I tilt my head in confusion. The cat stopped opening its mouth and started to curl back to its sleeping position. I don't know what just happened, but it's rather bizarre.

You know what... I've once read that some birds sometimes open their mouth without making any sound means that it's trying to speak or practicing talking something. Perhaps, maybe it really is trying to speak something.

A couple moments went by pretty fast. I didn't keep track of time, because of the rain I couldn't even see the sun. Right now, it's not giving me an idea whether or not the rain will end.

I keep waiting here. It's getting pretty boring to be honest.

Juvdashavnothinpeelleskafbadudachechigaw!

“What the F*ck!”

I jumped. Look right and left, seeing if anything is nearby. It seems like there's nothing. But where does this voice come from?

There's suddenly a voice inside my head. The voice was rather similar from the cat monster or should I say 'Acnolings?' that I encountered in the acnolings territory. This triggers more of my PTSD!

There's something different though. This time, the voice is literally inside my head. The previous encounter with the acnolings, the voice still came out from the acnolings like it was talking. This time, the voice was literally inside my head. That's why it creeps me out so much.

After I jumped like that, the cat seemed to be surprised as well. Does the voice also transmitted to the cat mind?

Not long after the voice comes back.

It seems like it's working!

This time the voice express a rather grateful expression. I was confused, should I be relieved that it's not something that'll kill me, or should I be worried that the acnolings found where we're hiding?

It's okay. This is the cat beside you that's talking

“Huh?”

I turn my head to the cat. Uhm... how should I talk back to this cat? Can this cat know what I'm saying in human language?

“Can you understand this? Are you acnolings?”

I said slowly and clear so that the cat might have an easier time digesting what I'm saying.

It's okay to speak normally, it seems I don't experience pitch change or miss translation. First, I'm not the acnolings. I may look like one, but trust me, I'm not an acnolings.

By the way I'm Nate, I've always been listening to you guys talk for this couple of night. But it seems that I've only manage to talk right now. If I'm not mistaken, you should be Lia right?

“N-Nate! What? You've been turned to a cat?!”

You don't have to scream. But yeah, I've been turned into a cat.

“So it is someone that I knew all along.”

It seems like it.

The cat talks! The cat f*cking talks!

Wait, should I call this thing a cat or Nate now?

I guess either way is fine.

At that moment we exchange dialogue, mostly was me telling and informing Nate what've just happen and our current situation. Nate also tell his share of the story.

To simplify, this is what Nate basically said. He said that the whole class is destroyed, the ceiling of the class crumbled down, and everyone in school starts panicking teacher, other classmen, and even the police was on their way. He said that he's the only one who could immediately get out of the rumble because nothing really hit him.

He then explain that even if that's the case, he's still got teleported here nonetheless. His vision become narrower and he start to lose balance. No one is noticing him because the whole school is still in panic. Then he finally succumb to the feeling he was having. The next moment was the same as me, he met the world voice and get the skill envy as well as the title ruler of envy. His skill make that he could steal any type of skill from the enemy and the enemy will not have that skill anymore. Not gonna lie, that's more OP than my Perseverance skill. He could just steal my perseverance skill and bam! He got my perseverance skill.

Anyway. Next he woke up with a sound of loud bang, the sound between fire and wind clashing together, the sound of two sword clang together, and the sound of screeching. He woke up next to when Inonami is fighting the acnolings. So that's when I was asleep if you guys don't remember it.

He saw that Inonami defeat the acnolings with ease, without really breaking a sweat. Damn that woman is seriously scary. He then explain that Inonami finally found him and decided to not kill the acnolings. Inonami then pick him up and flew back to where I was. But he did explain that he uses the Envy skill to steal the telepathy skill from the acnolings. His journey up until now was just trying to find a way to communicate with us.

Good thing that this cat is asleep when I was naked beside him. If I know that this cat is a guy that has been reborn as a cat and he's watching my naked body just then, I'd kill him on the spot. This is my 10 years old body, but still, it's my own freaking body. I wouldn't want anyone see me naked okay? You know what, I don't even want anyone to see me naked even if this is not my body.

Anyway. After he said all of that, a couple moments later Inonami finally came back from her hunt. Outside is still raining. Yet, her clothes and everything stay dry like a bright sunny day.

I want to tell Inonami that the cat could use telepathy and now could basically talk to us. But in the end, I'm just going to let Nate tell her himself. You have to tell this Nate!

"Yo! Let's cook together!"

"Eh?! What do you mean?"

"We're gonna cook together! Oh! Bring the cat with you!"

"Eeeehh?!!"

So... Inonami decided to make me cook. Well... At least that I'm imagining at the beginning. But, she's just want to cook while we watch her do it. She explain that some ingredient can boost your stats up. Then she also explain that if you want to make food that could increase MP, you need the skill 'Cook'.

Well... sure! That's helpful and all but what if we don't know how to cook? Not to mention that this information is not really helpful for the cat.

Well... You see... This will not be helpful to me... Lia has a skill that's basically able to replicate any skill, while I'm here cannot do anything else but steal somebody else skill. Good thing I know Lia and you also save me, if not then I'll probably skill you guys skill too.

The cat says it himself!

Anyway. It seems like Inonami-sensei over here look shocked. I don't blame her though.

"So you could talk! Since when!"

I use 'Envy' on the acnolings to steal its telepathy. So I basically could speak from the start, but I can only speak now. I don't know how to use this telepathy skill, so I have to figure it out myself. You didn't even use your appraisal on me.

"You could even understand our language!"

"The reason I didn't use appraisal on you because I don't have the permission. I appraise Lia because she let me appraise her."

Hmm... I see... Okay then, you could also appraise all you want. But not for peeking okay.

"Hahaha... Of course not!"

It seems like they're getting well with each other quite fast.

"Ehem... So, what is this 'cooking class' for?"

"I was planning to teach you guys how to increase your stats without leveling up. So then if you guys level up your stats that's already high will be multiplied exponentially."

"What? How does it actually work?"

Hmm... My assumption is that if we level up our stats will be multiplied by let's say 2x. Then, if our starting stats are let's say; 100, when we level up to level 2 then our stats will be 200. But if our starting stats is let's say 90. Then when we level up our stats will be 180. That's my assumption.

"Yeah. It's like that. But are you sure Lia would understand?"

"Yeah. I understand. And of course the nerd is right!"

Hahaha... So you are the one that's been calling me a nerd this whole time.

"You guys seems to be close friend."

"Nope!" *Nope!*

"See?"

What are the chance of me saying that in sync with Nate. I don't really hate Nate, but in my class he's just a normal guy. A nerd but got average score. I don't usually judge people by their scores, but this time is an exception. Because I need to find reasons okay.

Anyway. After she found out that the cat is finally able to talk she appraise it. His appraisal result is a weird one, take a look:

Nate **, *Felis catus* Lv.1**

Age : 3 Months

Stats :

HP: 50 / 50 SPD: 55

ATK: 30 DEF: 3

MP: 102/105 SP: 105 / 105

Avg. 72

Skill: Title:

Envy Holder of Envy (1%)

Telepathy Lv.1

See anything weird? No. It's the distribution of stats. My stats is well rounded, but his stats is more focused on MP and SP. Inonami said that this is kinda weird. But she somehow understands it.

“So... What and how are we gonna do this ‘training’ that you’ve been talking?”

“I’m gonna basically torture you guys beyond death.”

Dafuq you just say?!

“Language!”

“But yeah, what do you mean? How are we gonna survive? If you want to torture us beyond death, we’re surely gonna die then.”

“That’s your worry? Hahaha..! Don’t be worry. If you guys are dead, I can just revive you!”

“And how will you do that?”

“You see... I’m an undead. That’s why I’m hesitating to answer your question earlier. By being an undead I’m basically will never die due to old age. But I could still die. Now, the revive part is the perk that my master bestowed upon me. The skill to reverse the effect of being dead.”

“That’s... Great! I’m looking forward to it!”

Hell nah man! She literally just said that she will torture us to death then bring us back to life just to torture us back. That right there... Is beyond cruel!

Wait. You sure the effect will work on us. We're basically from another world. What if our spirit go back to our previous world?

"For that..."

She seems to be chanting something. I could feel that the atmosphere is getting heavier and denser.

<Ryouiki Tenkai! Eien no Yousuru!>

"Welcome! This is where you will be training. The reason is because when you kill anything here. It will just Respawn without giving you guys any EXP!"

Our entire surrounding becomes black, then a couple moments later I feel super dizzy, so I close my eyes. When the feeling of dizziness finally dissipate, I open my eyes just to be shocked that we're in another place.

I was in shocked, but neither Nate also speak a word. We're in a totally different place. It is still some kind of a forest. But here, I could feel that there's a surge of energy that wants to break my soul apart.

Couple moment passed after Inonami said something about Respawning. To be honest, I don't hear her saying anything. I only heard a mumble from her, nut I guess I was wrong because Nate began speaking.

Will it respawn in front of us or is there some place where they respawn?

"They will respawn in the place called 'Crystalline Spine', if you're wondering where. It's basically guarded by the last boss in this Domain."

"Wait, you make this?"

I was curious. If she didn't make this on her own. Why don't she just teleport us out of the forest? Though if she made this, it makes sense why she could teleported us to this place.

"Yeah! This is a place that I built. To make it simple, this is basically the expansion of my mana pool. By the way, because the enemy always respawn, you guys will as well. I called this place the everlasting embrace."

I could see why... Will you be here watching us?

"Yeah! I will always be watching. This is my domain after all. And if you want the information about this domain, you have to find out yourself. You guys will be together, good luck and make a good teamwork okay!"

So it is her domain. I guess I could make out what she want to do. She want to teleported us here so we become stronger, also she doesn't have to worry about us dying. In the other hand, while we're getting stronger, it would be much easier for her to navigate through the forest and find the way out because we're not in the way.

There she goes! She doesn't even ask me if I agree or not.

"I didn't even agree in the first place! That was just a sarcasm!"

She give me a ball that have appraisal attribute to measure the enemy strength, act as a food so we don't go hungry, and also give the information about the place name we are in. She also give the same thing for Nate, but he got a necklace instead of a ball. I guess that make sense.

Cat does not really know how to grab stuff. Well, it's not like their hand is made to grab stuff in the first place though. Anyway, this is the information about the current place we're at:

<Current Place: Zeruiah Grove

Possible enemies :

Ever Slime (2 Star)

Ever Demon (2 Star)

Pegasus (3 Star)

Ever Healer (2 Star)

Ever Dancer (2 Star)

Ever Goblin (2 Star)

Area Guardian :-

Description :-

End of Report- >

This gonna take us a long time. Inonami already teleported out from her own domain. I feel like this will take the rest of the novel to finish not gonna lie. But we have to go through this hell if we want to be stronk!

Most of the enemy here doesn't make sense. I mean, why is there a Pegasus and a Demon in the same place? This place resemble a forest. It's not a big one, but it's a forest nonetheless.

This place resemble that of a magical forest. I could feel energy surging all throughout this place. I bet when if I just cultivate here, my power will still increase.

The orb tell me that all the monster we're going to fight is at least 2 star level monster. So basically we're going to fight monster that are as powerful or even more powerful monster than the rabbits. Not to mention that this place is packed full with it.

You feel the energy surging throughout this place right? Let's just absorb that first before going on our journey. Our power is not enough to challenge anything ahead.

“Yeah. But how exactly are we going to absorb this energy, or should I say ‘mana’?”

I feel like we're just going to absorb it without really doing anything. But if we just clear our mind, and focus on absorbing it, it will be better.

“Yeah. And how do we do that?”

Just focus on your breathing I guess.

“I don't know where and why you came out with those conclusion, but I guess I'm just going to trust you right now.”

I just like to read a lot of Chinese novel about cultivation. Most of them were fiction, but I guess it will work nonetheless.

We began absorbing the mana that's in the air and I could already feel that my body want to just explode from the surge of energy coming through me, this feels like when Inonami were fighting the acnolings in the forest. Though, the energy they're giving out were way scarier than this.

Would you like to set up some scenarios and strategies?

“I'm having a hard time absorbing this mana, so I think let's just do this first, then set up some strategies.”

Okay.

Is the cat already absorbing the mana without any trouble? How? How did you do that?

“Are you perhaps already absorbing the mana that’s within this territory?”

Yeah. I guess monster have easier time absorbing this energy.

“Oh... That make sense.”

I guess it really does make sense. Wait, does that mean when I able to absorb the mana here without any problem I basically become a monster myself?

There’s nothing to worry about right now. I really need to start absorbing this mana. Thus I began to absorbing it again. It hurts, every time I inhale a lungful of air, it feels like all part of my body were stab by little tiny needle. I persist on going until,

<Acquired Skill: Mana Absorption Lv.1. Skill that allow the user to absorb mana.>

There we go! I guess my perseverance skill does not only make me able to replicate skill. It also make me easier to obtain a new one! Way to go!

I was pumped by this. When I try to absorb the mana again, I feel way less pain. There’s still pain that hurt me, but it’s more like periodically, unlike the first time, it was constant pain.

This time it’s easier to absorb it. I manage to quickly catch up to Nate. He’s still cultivating right beside me, I feel like he’s stats is already began to move up. I can’t tell for sure, because I cannot use the appraisal skill, neither I can use the ball to appraise him. You see, the ball only work on enemy in this domain.

There’s also one last thing I could do, that’s using the perseverance skill to appraise him. But that would just be a waste of my mana, at least for now it is. I must appraise my and Nate stats before we went inside the main grove area to be sure that we’re strong enough to fight anything inside of it.

As time passes on I could feel more energy coming in through me and less pain. I guess this is what it feels like when your stats increase. I do not feel more powerful, but I do get this some sort of dopamine boost. I could get addicted to this, I need to be careful.

So... Are we going to plan something out?

“Yeah. Let’s see, could you use your necklace thing?”

...

Some time has passed. We decided to stop and plan something out because we don’t feel the same effect of cultivation as before. I guess it really does make sense since we were getting more accustomed to the mana surrounding us, just like the monster here.

Anyway, this is the appraisal result:

Lia **, Human Lv.2**

Age : 10 years

Stats :

HP: 120 / 120 SPD: 55

ATK: 95 DEF: 15

MP: 92/107 SP: 113/ 113

Avg. 108

Skill:

Title:

Perseverance

Swordplay Lv.2

Ruler of Perseverance

Pure Determination Mana Absorp Lv.1

Unyielding

~

Nate **, *Felis catus* Lv.1**

Age : 3 Months

Stats :

HP: 65 / 65 SPD: 95

ATK: 40 DEF: 8

MP: 160/160 SP: 135 / 135

Avg. 100

Skill:

Title:

Envy

Holder of Envy (1%)

Telepathy Lv.1

That’s insane if I do say so myself. Our stats basically increased up to the three digit mark. We’re basically a high 2 star individual. Granted, we’re

still no match for a group of 2 star rank beast. But at least we could put up a decent fight when we're in a pinch.

Decided that we will defeat the monster one by one. I say that we should limit their abilities to communicate with each other and he said that he have a plan for that. So then we plan out about where we should go. In the end we're just going to the mother tree area right in the center of the grove.

Well... Here we go then! Challenging the Everlasting Embrace!

CH. TEACHER 2

THE TEACHER'S TUTORIAL

1

At last, I'm here!

So this is the tutorial level huh?

This is more like an amphitheater. There's no one here. Not a single person is watching me. It's super eerie here. Why is there no one in this amphitheater but I was placed in the center of it?

I'm scared. Is this really the tutorial? You sure this is not a horror movie scenario? It sure feels like it.

This amphitheater looked like it's modeled after the arenas of the Roman Empire. But there's this scent that I couldn't point my finger on. It's a foul scent, so unpleasant I would throw up. The eeriness of the amphitheater and the scent that's unpleasant is turning on my fight or flight responses.

The amphitheater has 8 gate that surround me, I was in the middle of it. The inner walls seems to reach 20 meter in height. While the exterior wall could easily reach 100 meter. The sky is super beautiful though, it's a night sky filled with star.

Because of that, the amphitheater is also super dark but it's not pitch dark. There's a faint purple light coming out from every gate that surrounded me.

I could hear a single thing, the silence is killing me. However, I didn't dare shouting anything out.

The amphitheater has the radius about 250 meter from the center to the inner walls, making the diameter of the center part about 500 meter. If you are wandering, that means the perimeter/circumference of the enter area is about 1,570 meter.

The amphitheater is about 10 story high. Overall it's a huge building. There's no way I could get out of here, at least not right now. There's also this huge statue that reside in the either end of every gate entrance. The statue is like the statue from S*lo Level*ng. You know, that light novel/webtoon from Korea.

Anyway. What I want to say is that the statue looked like it will come alive any second now. Good thing it doesn't start to smile at me. If that were the case, I would pass out right away.

Some moment has passed, I decided to lift my foot from the middle of the amphitheater. As I about to move I realize that my footstep doesn't make any noise. Am I deaf or I just don't make any noise? I turned to my back.

“!”

Without me realizing, one of the gate is already open. There is nothing come out of it (yet). I take a throughout look at the amphitheater. Yeah, there's no one here. Who's operating this then?

<...>

I hear a distant voice of the system, it's like a water drop sound in a mountain cave. I couldn't take the sound that the system make. It sounded from one of the amphitheater gate.

After taking another look at the supposedly visitor seat, I glance back at the opened gate preparing if anything comes out from it.

I said that, 'I don't like thriller' you dingus!

I've been waiting here for quite some time now. I still haven't lifted my gaze from the opened gate. I've become accustomed to the eeriness of this amphitheater. I'm still scared to shout anything out though.

Gritt

There it is! The only sound I heard in the last 10 minutes. It sounded like someone is bringing a giant metal sword and just dragging it across a stone floor.

The sound is getting clearer and clearer each second. I know that the sound comes from the opened gate. But somehow, this amphitheater makes it echo to all over the place.

As the sound stops, the 'someone that drag the metal object through the stone floor' has shown himself up. It was an armored skeleton fully equipped with a giant blunt metal long sword. The armor it's wearing was made out of some kind of black stone.

The skeleton was about 6'3 tall (~191cm) while the sword is about 6 feet tall (~183cm). Sword literally as tall as the skeleton's body, excluding the head. That's a tall skeleton right there, my height is only 5'11 tall (~180cm). That means I'm shorter than the freaking sword!

Anyway. That skeleton seems to be staring at me. I'm getting uncomfortable, but at least it doesn't start attacking me right away.

I'm confused. What should I do? I try to appraise the skeleton, but again, I couldn't. I didn't dare go near that thing. The freaking sword itself is enough to split me in half even if it make a stabbing motion from the top of my head. That thing is taller than me.

I remembered that this is the 'tutorial level'. So, I guess I really do have to find a way to use the appraisal skill to move to 'the next level'. But how?!

I try squinting my eye, calling out 'Appraisal', make stupid gesture, etc. How do I exactly do it when I was chased by the Anisopteragon? Do I need to panic first to activate it? Surely not.

Right now I'm just recalling what I did to activate the appraisal skill. Though from what I remembered, the system is the one who force me to use the skill.

'This encrypted text just appear right in front of me, it's also not helping in any sort of way! This thing will just be a burden, a distraction! And now it starts to make an annoying noise!'

That's what I remember thinking to myself while sh*tting my pants because I was getting chased by the Anisopteragon. What is the 'encrypted text' says? It may be encrypted, but I guess I could remember some sort of symbol from it right? Maybe if I remember those encrypted text, I could simulate the activation step for my appraisal skill.

By the way. What kind of tutorial level is this?! What kind of tutorial let the player find out what he/she supposed to do? Aren't the point of tutorial are for explaining what the player supposed to do and how to do it? Even if in the end I learned how to use Appraisal, I would still complaint about the whole tutorial the system provided.

Why am I being the kid that always complaint about school being a place for memorizing and not for learning? I mean, I'm a (former) teacher, so I guess that's kind of ironic. I agree though that school is a place for memorizing and not for learning.

Anyway. I'm still thinking about the encrypted text that the system left before I was able to use the appraisal skill.

Wait, maybe that encrypted text is the product of something else. If I call the system that control this world a 'system', could I just use some kind of programming language to activate a skill?

Let's try it out, *<skill> from self to nearest target, activate: appraisal </skill>*.

<Activating, skill: Appraisal>

Hey! It worked! How the f*ck did it worked?! What kind of cliché sh*t is this?!

I just try to imagine some kind of a command in my head, but it somehow work! Is this what it feels like to a beginner programmer that make up command but it somehow work in the end? I'm confused but also happy.

So yeah, the encrypted text that was in front of my gaze earlier in the forest was some sort of a product that were made after I activate a skill. I took a closer look at it. The 'writing' is somewhat close to that of a Japanese kanji.

So? Is the system Japanese? Pantsu nani iro?

Oh, by the way, this is the appraisal result:

Tutorial, Warrior Skeleton Lv.5

Stats:

HP: 100 / 100 SPD: 50 (-20)

ATK: 100 (+100) DEF: 10 (+30)

MP: - / - SP: 500 / 500

Avg. 125

Skill: -

I also use a use the appraisal skill on myself and this is the result:

Said ***, Human Lv.1**

Age : 24 years

Stats :

HP: 210 / 210 SPD: 55

ATK: 115 DEF: 18

MP: 185 / 195 SP: 190 / 190

Avg. 178

Skill :

Appraisal Lv.3 Student Overseer Lv.1

Survivalist Lv.2

So. Let's talk about it shall we. My overall stats are higher than that skeleton. But if it were to come down to endurance battle, I would be no match. The skeleton stamina points is way higher than the other stats. At least that was what I think SP means.

“!”

Not long after I use appraisal on the skeleton. The skeleton started to move towards me. Bringing the giant sword with it, it charges towards me. I guess the negative or positive number beside its stats resemble the effect that of the equipment it's wearing. The armor does make the skeleton defense higher, the sword does make the skeleton attack higher, but both of them also limited its movement. If I was force to fight this thing, would just let it attack me first then use the hang time to steal the sword from the skeleton and punch him in the face.

And that's what I exactly do. You see, the skeleton is charging at me with killing intent. I reflexively fight the skeleton back out of self-defense okay?

After I kill that skeleton, I know that the tutorial has only just begun. There's 2 more gates that opened after I defeat that skeleton. From the two gate and the one before that were already open, another skeleton came out from it. But again, it doesn't seem to do anything.

I appraise it again,

Tutorial, Mage Skeleton Lv.5

Stats:

HP: 100 / 100 SPD: 15

ATK: 100 (+75) DEF: 5

MP: 500 (+100)/ 500 SP: - / -

Avg. 150

Skill :

Fireball Lv.5 Water Ball Lv.5

Wind Cutter Lv.5 Stone Bullet Lv.5

-

Tutorial, Archer Skeleton Lv.5

Stats:

HP: 100 / 100 SPD: 25

ATK: 100 (+25) DEF: 15

MP: 200 / 200 SP: 300 / 300

Avg. 175

Skill :

Magic Arrow Lv.5

There's also another one of them, but it was the same as the warrior skeleton stats.

Just when I was trying to take a break, the archer skeleton start to shoot its arrow at me. I guess the skeleton will not attack until I use some sort of a skill and resemble me initiating the battle.

Anyway. The mage one is holding its staff silently. Oh, Look! The staff start glowing a faint red color. It's using magic!

Whoosh!

A fireball shot out from the skeleton mage staff. I dodge it with ease, but the fireball explode upon impact with the ground, sending me to be launched back by the shockwave.

The warrior skeleton is sneaking up behind me. Luckily, I landed right beside the corpse of the previous warrior skeleton. I turn my gaze and pick the sword that was left by the previous warrior skeleton, I swing it with all my strength (because it's f*cking heavy) and hit its head, launching it a couple meter away.

I think it's dead?

Anyway. I drop my sword and start running towards the mage skeleton. Its magic attack is deadly enough to kill me in one shot and also it's a pretty fast attack. I dash forward to it and uppercut it.

The head was sent of flying back (again). Without wasting any more time I dash towards the archer skeleton. The skeleton shot its arrow but I easily dodge it. Then I just simply punch the skeleton down.

<Wave 2 out of 100 cleared!>

<Replenishing stats>

<Wave 3 incoming!>

What!?

There's 100 wave of this sh*t?! I already having a hard time right now, and you're saying there's 100 wave of this sh*t?

Anyway. The voice that was previously echoes lightly are now as clear as a bright sunny day ringing inside my head. The voice is kinda different though. This one has a lot more personality than the previous one.

As I'm still thinking about the voice, five more gates opened up, leaving all the gates open. Not too long after, skeleton starting to come out of it. This time they wasted no time on waiting for me to use a skill and start charging at me right away.

“!”

Because I'm surrounded, I can't just jump back, I need to fight the skeletons! 5 of them charges at me. It's the warrior skeletons. I sneak pass their attack and head to the backline where there's 1 mage skeleton and 2 archer skeletons. The mage skeleton already finishes its casting and ready to launch its attack at me.

I jumped back to the 5 skeletons warrior that are now jumbled together. I want to see if the skeleton can hit each other. It turns out they can't. Why do you have to make things harder for me!

Anyway. I dashed forward to the mage skeleton and punched its face. It seems like I only need one punch to finish to any type skeleton. So the main problem is their number. So I grab the staff and try to activate one of the spell within it.

<Skill> from staff, activate: stone bullet </skill>

<Activating, skill: stone bullet>

A couple of stone appear in front of me. I trigger it, and it started to shoot out the stone bullet. I immediately aim it at the archer that was only a couple meter from where I'm standing. Three down, five more to go!

<Optimizing MP uses>

What?

I'm confused. Did the system start to talk to me even if I don't use the command?

Anyway. I charge back at the five warrior skeletons. Because their movement is so slow I could easily find my way through even taking 2 skeleton down while I'm at it. The skeleton here have high defense and attack, but they do have a weakness. Is called the lack of calcium and protein. Their bone is so fragile and weak, I don't even know how they could hold this heavy sword and just start swinging it along like it's their extendable arm.

Anyway. Because their movement speed is so slow and by just attacking straight in the face is enough to kill them, I finish the last 3 of them pretty soon after.

<Wave 3 out of 100 cleared>

<Replenishing stats>

So I guess every time I finish a wave, all of my stats went back to full, so I don't get tired. Unless if the wave become so long that I spent all of my energy while the wave is still occurring.

The system is also starting to talk to me whether or not I use my command. Right now it's talking about maximizing and optimizing the uses of my SP. My body do feel a lot lighter since the system 'optimize' my stats.

<Wave 4 incoming!>

Okay, it's time to focus. There's 8 skeleton warrior, 5 archer, and 2 mage. The mage from what it seems, is a stationary unit while the warrior chase me, and the archer is somewhere in the middle.

I decided to take down the warrior first, then the mage, and finally the archers. The battle was over quite quickly because I already know their attack patterns.

<Wave 4 out of 100 cleared>

<Replenishing stats>

But there's still 96 more wave coming. How long will I be here for? Maybe months!

Anyway. It seems that every time I finish a wave, the system voice began to show more emotion. It's still monotone though nonetheless. When I try communicating with it just by talking, it still won't response to me.

I appraise myself again, and it seems that my stats doesn't go up even if it's a tiny little bit. It stays the same.

<Wave 5 incoming!>

Anyway. From now on I could basically sense their attack patterns. So *bring it on!*

...

<Wave 10 out of 100 cleared>

<Replenishing stats>

So, some time has passed. It doesn't seem that my stats would ever go up. I've killed so many skeleton by now that I'm having a hard time navigating in this 'arena'.

<Clearing arena...>

Well, speak of the devil!

The bones cleared of from the arena. I'm still trying to communicate with the system by just talking to it in my head. But it seems that it'll never work I guess.

<Requirements completed>

<Skill Granted: Great Sage. The user have special connection to the system and could speak with the system freely>

Okay. You don't have to embarrass me like that. Anyway, I'm actually hyped right now. When I try to speak to the system, it actually respond!

Hey system, can you tell me the fastest way to finish the tutorial?

<Notice. The fastest way to finish the tutorial is by triggering the 'Dispatch All Wave' trigger. Do you want to trigger it?>

The system answers me now? Even giving me a solution!

Let me just think about it. The name basically tell me that I'm going to fight all the wave from wave 11 to 100 in this very moment. Am I ready for that?

It seems like for this past 10 wave, the skeleton does not get stronger what so ever. So if I dispatched every single wave, I basically have to fight with number and not with power.

Also, if I dispatched all the wave in one wave. I basically have no time to regenerate my stats. Usually the system will do it for me in between wave. But if I don't finish this 'tutorial' quickly, I'd be bored the h*ll out.

Hey system, can you make me stronger in order to fight all of the wave at the same time?

<Notice. Solution: take over the body and do the optimal action in order to fight all of the wave at the same time>

Wait. So you're telling me I could use auto pilot now? Okay! Now this is the type of RPG I like!

Hey system dispatched all the wave out then turn on autopilot!

<Notice. Dispatching all of the wave>

<Every wave have been dispatched>

<Taking control over the body>

As the system said that, I hear countless enemy marching their way here. My vision is getting hazier, then suddenly I was in third person view of myself. Is this what it feels like to have the system taking control of your body?

Way to go! Wish you the best of luck Jarvis!

The moment all of the skeleton warrior march towards me, my body glows a green aura. The aura surround me like a super sa*yan.

Anyway. I started punching the skeleton. It seems like every punch send several skeleton back. Now this is what I called a skill!

Maybe I'm cheating because of the whole 'system taking control over me' type of thing. But even the system now have very limited thing it could do. We're talking about my body here. Even if the system taking control of it, there's still the fact that I was weak.

Anyway. It seems I was making quick work of the skeleton so far. Through this bird eye view of myself I could see my own stats. Despite being incased by an aura and using magic left and right, my MP is not going down as fast as I was imagine it will be. It still dropping down, but the rate is slow, about 1 to 2 MP every second.

According to my quick math's, I will be able to hold this state for about 2 minutes. My SP though, it's getting drained pretty quickly, if this keeps up my stamina will only hold me for about 1 minutes. And I don't think that the enemy is coming through the gate fast enough to make this battle last for only 1 minute.

Hey Jarvis, what will you do if I ran out of SP?

<Notice. By sacrificing life force to regenerate SP and MP back>

I don't know why the system is trying to kill me, but if I made it out alive from this 'tutorial', I'll do whatever it takes. Saying that, my aura is getting bigger and bigger. There are also more enemies coming through the gate, as if the previous rate is not scary enough.

You need some help there dude?

<Notice. Everything seems to be under control for now>

Hmm? Really? I mean, it does seem everything is still in control though.

Oh, I have an idea! Can you make me fly?

My strategy is just to fly up then wait until every enemy pile up, then use mass destructive spell to kill them of quickly.

<Notice. Cannot multi task and create skill while taking control body>

Okay then let's swap for now.

I don't know what it feels like incased by such aura. Bet you it's not pleasant. But here goes nothing, I just hope that I could still use the super sa*yan state.

<Notice. Switching consciousness>

Here goes nothing! My vision become hazy again, but now I could see my vision change from third person to first person again.

As my vision change I immediately felt intense pain. But I endure it because I'm basically get teleported right in the middle of the enemy line. I immediately start fighting the skeletons. Not long after, I manage to get used to it.

Detroit Smash! (LOL)

Anyway. I started to feel dizzy from using this, it's only been a couple of second yet I feel like I'm about to pass out.

<Notice. Skill: Fly, has been successfully synthesized>

Whew! The system comes in clutch again! But that was super-fast! What the hell?!

<Activating, skill: Fly>

With that I was sent up flying through the air a couple hundreds of meter. From here, I could literally see the area outside of the amphitheater.

It was a vast desert with seemingly no end to it. The night is darker out there. In fact the star that was visible from the amphitheater seems to be the reflection from the light of the amphitheater itself. If you were to get outside of the ginormous amphitheater, you will only succumb to despair knowing that there's only endless dessert waiting for you beyond what it seems to be the only structure for millions upon millions of mile. Might as well say that this is the only structure in this dimension.

Hey system. What is this place?

<Notice. Current place, Tutorial. Was an instances created by the system in order to teach new inhabitant about the system. But then used as a light penalty instances. The only structure in this dimension is the amphitheater

inspired by the Roman Empire amphitheater. This dimension stretch 256 million miles ($\sim 4.12 \times 10^8$ km) in every direction except up and down. The sky only display as night sky with no star, just pure black. There's also foul scent left behind by the amphitheater because of previous experiment that has gone wrong. There's 3 other instance except the 'Tutorial'>

So this is basically an infinite dimension meant for a punishment that's stretch more than 500 times that of the sun radius. How could the system make such vast dimension in the first place. And you're saying that there's 3 other instance than this?!

It's hard to belief that the system has this much power over this world. But it's not the time to fantasize about that right now. The skeleton start to pile up down there. Surprisingly, none of the archer and the mage shot out any arrow or spell to me. Maybe they're just buried by the number of warrior skeleton that we're literally piling up like a zombie apocalypse movie.

Hey system. Is that all the skeleton?

<Notice. That's supposedly all of them>

Okay. Activate the finishing blow protocol.

<Executing command>

I didn't tell you guys this. But when I was controlled by the system I came up with a skill. My 'original' skill.

<Command Successful. Now Implementing>

<Skill> Hack Mode Enable! </skill> (LOL)

Here we go!

“United State of Smash!”

With that I punched towards the skeletons. The shockwave transfer all of my green aura downwards launching it like some sort of a magic. My fist didn't exactly hit any of them, but the shock wave is enough to turn them to smithereens. With that, all the skeleton that were piling up were all turned to ash, marking the 'tutorial level' to an end.

Ugh...

I'm exhausted. That last attack put so much strains on my body. I couldn't even move a single finger. All part my body is totally numb. I couldn't feel a single thing. Though I could still think and hear.

<Notice. 'The Tutorial' has been completed. Now teleporting to previous location>

Ah. I'm dead now, thank you.

What do you mean by 'teleporting to previous location!?' You mean the place where that behemoth was chasing me before? No thank you!

...

Huh?

There's suddenly a very familiar object in front of me. I cannot move my body, but I could clearly see that, that is a phone, a smartphone!

"Hello? Somebody there?"

It... Talked?!

CHAPTER 5

TOWARDS A TREE!

1

We've been walking for approximately 30 minutes. The only monster we've encounter is the 'Ever Slime'. The slime vary in color, usually it depends on what type of magic they're capable of using. Red slime uses fire, blue is water, green is earth, and yellow is thunder. There are also black and white that Nate thought was light and dark, but they don't really have any magic capabilities.

The appraisal result for the slime all seems to be the same. The only major different is their magic. We've been killing this thing left and right, it seems their number does not diminished what so ever. But their stats (luckily) is usually under 70. My magic consumption is still quite high, but it slowed down a bit after I got the mana absorption skill. Probably because I'm still absorbing mana even if I'm just walking. There's also the fact that the mana is getting richer as we get closer to the giant tree up ahead.

How's your stats? Does it increases?

“Yeah. It has increased couple of digit. How about you?”

I don't know. You're the one who's supposed to tell me right? I do find it a little bit easier to defeat these slimes.

“Oh. Right. You cannot use appraisal...”

My avg stats has increase by 9. It may seem like a subtle difference, but those 9 point is enough to overpower the slime. Now I don't have to use a special strategy to kill just one of them. I now only have to just encase my blade with fire. Because the sword has been enchanted by fire attribute by Inonami, I just need to activate some sort of rune inside it, and just start swinging it around.

For Nate, he still have some trouble defeating the slime. The slime here is very resilient though. The first time we've encounter it, we need to work together right off the bat even though we've just got a power up.

It turns out their resilient-ness is because they have some sort of a crystal inside of them that causes their regenerative ability to improve by 10 times. How do I know? Using the ball Inonami gave me, duh.

I sense something is coming here. I don't know if it something dangerous though.

“Okay. How do you know that it's coming towards us?”

Cat reflexes I guess.

“Hmm... I guess that makes sense.”

The reason I said that is because he's prediction has always been right. In the previous world he predicted like 90% of the test that was suddenly were given to us. He also predicted that we will be facing countless of slime here. He's reason might be unreasonable, but he's always be unreasonable in the previous world too. So I could only belief him.

Lo and behold! He's right!

There's something coming down towards us from the sky while we're still fighting the endless wave of slimes. When I finally be able to look at what has appeared, I was rather shocked. It was a human. At least that's what I'm seeing.

The 'human' wear a blue nun like attire, holding a similar colored staff. It seems like it's chanting something. From its attire I could only guess that it's some sort of a healer.

Get outta there!

With that warning I jumped back. At the exact moment, every slime that I didn't completely destroy the body was resurrected. So it is from the enemy side. I should get rid of it!

Not long after, a bunch of similar 'human' start to descend down. They're all start to resurrect back the slime that we've just killed.

Use your orb to appraise them.

I immediately use it without saying anything:

Everlasting Healer Lv.25

Status : -

Stats :

HP: 300 / 300 SPD: 60

ATK: - DEF: 10

MP: 1000 / 1000 SP: - / -

Rank : 2 Star

Description :

Its only purpose is to resurrect fallen everlasting soldier until its MP ran out and kill itself. It cannot attack, rather it uses the resurrected fallen soldier as defense and offense. One Healer is enough to resurrect 100, 2 star units / 10, 3 star units / 1 special unit.

That's the appraisal result. It may be a little different from the usual one you see, but that's because this thing is a handmade troops that Inonami build in her own dimension. Because she's the one who came out with the 'star system', all of the troops here is based on the 'star system' that she makes.

Can I just point out that this healer could basically resurrect 100 slime? I don't know how much we've killed, but I'm sure at most we've only killed like 300 slime. Now there's a full on fleet of about a dozen of them coming this way.

Can you take care of the slimes? I'll take care of the healer. My body is rather small so I could probably sneak pass the wave of slimes that's coming.

“Sure! Good luck!”

With that, Nate took off to the distance, swallowed up by the endless wave of slime. I quickly encase my sword with flame and start to mow down

the slime. This is a battle between endurance. Except, we're literally fighting thousands of enemy, while they're just fighting 2 really strong and highly individual.

All this time, Nate could only do scratch as his main attack. So I don't really know how he planned to defeat the healer back there. Well, he's the type of person that would never do anything unless he's sure of the outcome. That may make him a coward, but if you see what he'd done to achieve that outcome, he's not really a coward. He's just a thinker.

Anyway. I don't know what Nate is doing, but I haven't seen any change in action between the slime and the healer. I know that he's not dead at least. I know this because of the ball. This thing is seriously useful.

Hey. Can you still hear me?

Uh... yeah... But how do I supposed to respond? I couldn't just shout. The enemy will know that Nate is planning to attack from the back.

Hey Voice. Borrow me telepathy skill to communicate with Nate.

<Notice. Using skill: Telepathy to communicate. Every message sent will be charged>

"Yes. Can you hear me back?"

Okay. I can hear you back. Can you lead the slime away from the healer?

"Sure!"

With that I started to lure the slime out from the healer, leaving Nate a little bit more space to do some action. I lure them back using the flame on my sword as a flag to aggravate them. Making them chasing me. It seems like even if the healer could heal them, the monster that they resurrected still have their free will.

"Okay. No pressure, but it's all on you."

Yeah. Thank you!

"No problem."

#

[Nate's POV]

I'm hiding behind the trees trying to use my one and only Envy skill. It seems that my Envy skill does not only able to steal skill, but could also steal appearance of the monster I've killed. I don't know how much potential that this skill has left to offer, but for now this will be sufficient enough to kill the healer.

Without further ado, I immediately change appearance to reflect that of the slime, then use a barrage of fire attack to assassinate of the healer. If another healer found out, then they will target me instead. Not to mention that they could easily resurrected each other.

The Envy skill is a more powerful version of what you called a doppelganger. I could steal someone else skill and even their appearance, and while I was in disguise, I could alter my stats between the ones I resemble or the ones that I have. For example, the slime has fire attribute magic, and I have a lot of MP. If I were to steal the skill from the slime, I obviously able to use the skill using my MP. But if I were to steal the appearance, I could use their inscribed stats as well to make myself harder to recognize. That also have a couple of downside, like my MP is decreased to the amount that the slime has. But if my enemy stats is overall higher than mine, I could use that as a boost to my stats. The only downside, at least for now is that I could only steal their appearance once I've killed them. Unlike doppelganger where they could just mimic their target even when they're still alive.

So, after I kill one of the healer. I quickly transform to steal its appearance. When I steal someone else appearance their original body turned to dust. That's why I called it 'steal' not 'mimic'.

Anyway. Since I was not longer in cat like body, I can use the full potential of this humanlike body. I immediately ran towards the other healer and use fire magic to kill the rest of them. That doesn't took that long.

If you're asking how do I use flame magic. I basically steal one of the slime skill when I was in disguised. When I appraise them using my necklace, I couldn't see their skill. But I know that they could use fire magic.

My assumption is that, the necklace or the ball that Inonami give us is a device that mimic that of the appraisal skill. But this necklace/ball is more

suitable in this realm because it gives you description on what the enemy could do to you or what they're capable of.

Hey Lia. Can give me a favor and use your perseverance skill and appraise them?

By the way, my telepathy skill has leveled up to level 2. The range of it is far greater now. I could communicate with telepathy with the range of 200 meter now. That's a huge difference even though it only increased by one.

“Why? Are you done yet?”

I'm done, right now I'm just clearing the slime here. Can you use the appraisal skill? I have a feeling that different result will appear when you use your appraisal and not the ball Inonami gave you.

I was responded with silence. I don't know how far she went in to the distance, but I hope it's not that far.

A couple moments just passed. I'm still clearing the wave of slime here. I don't know how much my stats has gone up, but since I turn myself to the body of the healer, I'm actually have a better time killing of the slimes. Also, since I'm still in this body, I could also revive the slimes here and make them my minion, but I decided not to.

I sense that there's reinforcement coming this way. This time, it seems like it's not a group of healer. I immediately turn myself back to my cat form and start heading back towards Lia.

#

[Lia's POV]

Where the heck is that cat?! The last transmission I've got from him was something about using appraisal or some sort. I've lured the slime back enough I think. Right now I'm still fighting these slimes.

-Lo? Can you hear me?

That's Nate! *“Where are you?”*

Oh! Finally! There's more reinforcement coming this way. If we wanted to reach that tree we have to keep pushing forward.

“You’re the one who told me to stand back.”

Yeah, I’m sorry about that. Right now I’m heading back to our initial spot. I’ll be waiting.

“Okay. I’ll be there.”

With that I hurried myself killing of the slimes. After I’m done with that I ran back toward our initial spot.

“Nate!”

Oh! Can you use your appraisal and aim it towards the sky?

“Huh? Don’t you mean use the ball?”

No. I have a theory that you can use the appraisal skill to get different result than just using the ball. Although I’m sure using the ball will give you more detailed information about the description of the unit.

“And why exactly you want me to aim it up towards the sky for?”

Even though I asked him that, I’ve already use my appraisal skill combine with the ball appraisal capability.

Just cat instinct.

Of course he’s going to said that. By the way, the wave of slime has diminished a little bit. Right now Nate is fending off the slimes all by himself while I’m using appraisal to check the ‘reinforcement’.

If you still can’t get any feedback. We’re just gonna run for the tree okay.

“Yeah. You need help there?”

Nah.

Just a couple moments after that short conversation, I’ve got a response on my appraisal skill. Its name is Pegasus, it has quite a lot of speed, but the main point is the skill that it has. I don’t know that this classify as a skill, but one of its skill was called ‘wing’. Aren’t Pegasus supposed to be a horse with wings? If they have the skill ‘wing’ that means that they’re born without them? There’s also one more skill, it’s just called flame shot.

Not long after, the ball also pick up the Pegasus as an entity that's coming towards us. The ball picked up that this thing has rank of 3 star. Judging by its average stats when I used my appraisal skill, a 3 star ranked monster sit with stats in the three digit. For this one, it's at the 200th.

Pegasus Lv.25

Stats:

HP: 500 / 500 SPD: 90
ATK: 175 DEF: 40
MP: 320 / 320 SP: 550 / 550

Avg. 385

Skill:

Wing Lv. 5 Flame Shot Lv.2

~

Pegasus Lv.25

Status : -

Stats :

HP: 500 / 500 SPD: 90
ATK: 175 DEF: 35
MP: 320 / 320 SP: 550 / 550

Rank : 3 Star

Description :

It's a four legged beast with horn and wings. It's tanky in general and could attack with its wing using the feather that builds it, but its main attack is a blue fire attack that came out from its horn. Despite its appearance, it's not hot when you touch it.

That's the difference between my appraisal skill and the orb one. Overall, there's not that much of a difference between them. It looks like my appraisal skill has quite the range despite being some sort of a skill that I 'create' and not the original one. Why did I assume that you asked? It's because it has been a couple minutes yet Pegasus is not coming. Is it that far away?

“There's something com-“

Throw me up. I could probably see it.

“There’s clearly something wrong with you. Okay then, fine, I hope you can go back down safely”

I picked Nate up then throw the cat up to the sky. I never throw a cat before, even though he asked for it, I still somewhat feel bad.

They’re up here. It seems like they’re preparing a skill to use. It’s probably trying to shoot out the blue flame from its horn. You need to run first. Don’t worry about me, I have higher speed stats than you.

“Okay!”

First, what do you mean ‘they’? How many is there?! And the second thing is that Nate probably also using its necklace appraisal to detect the presence of the Pegasus above us. That’s why he know about the abilities that the Pegasus have.

This new enemy has stats overall higher than us. If we were to work together to defeat them, one is enough to make us basically use all of our strength. Not to mention that we’re just done having to fight hundreds of slimes.

While I take of running, Nate is still in the air. Did I throw him to high? Whatever, for now I need to take some distance away from the potential blast radius than

“Do you have any plans if we weren’t able to outrun it? I mean, their speed stats is lower than your previous speed stats, but I’m going to be caught up no matter what.”

That’s why you run towards the tree first. For me, I think I have a solid plan. So you don’t have to worry about me.

“Okay then. I’ll be waiting up ahead!”

I don’t know if he underestimated me or what, but I guess if he has some plans might as well try it. He’s ‘that’ type of person. Anyway, I should really get moving.

Hey voice. Boost my movement speed for 20 seconds will you?

<Notice. Using skill: Speed, to boost movement speed for 20 seconds>

With that, I took off leaving the cat behind with its ‘plan’. I just hope that he doesn’t bring too much trouble to me.

#

[Nate’s POV]

Lia did throw me upward huh? Isn’t this a little too high? Whatever, I have a couple of things I wanted to try out. I may die in the process though. But knowing that we will just respawn does not put any stakes doesn’t it? I could die however many times I want and still comes back stronger than before. Granted, it will be excruciating every time I die. I’d try to not die though.

When I saw the Pegasus for the first time, it’s actually quite beautiful. It has 2 wings with rainbow color and its horn was a crystal light blue color. The body is a horse body (obviously) with white skin tone and every hair has a gradient color starting from light blue to galaxy blue color.

They’re three of them here and all seems to be preparing an attack to launch towards the ground below. I don’t know what we do to your kind, but we’ve been only killing slimes this whole time. Why are y’all trying to kill us?

Anyway. The plan is super simple. Using my Envy skill, I will ‘turn’ into the healer and also matched my stats with the healer. I want to see if they will or will not attack each other. With this, I’m also testing whether or not my disguised using the Envy skill is good enough to fool them into thinking I’m one of them.

Assuming that the healer is actually one of them or they’re just one in this domain and their main purpose was to fend of intruders. For now, I really need to get on the ground and take cover. I obviously don’t want them to see my transformation turning into the healer.

When I finally able to reach the ground, I see that there’s no longer any creature here. It seems like not only the Pegasus is waiting for all the monster to get out, it also seems like the monster here is also get somewhat notified that the Pegasus’s is attacking, therefore trying to get out because of the attack that it’s preparing.

I quickly turn to the healer and start running as well. Just when I think I get out from the blast radius. I heard something fired from the sky. It sounded like a plasma rifle. Not like I actually know what a plasma rifle will sound like. But not long after, I could see that the ground behind me is getting obliterated by the Pegasus's attack, leaving only a crater. I thought that I was exposed, but soon the forest start to regrow itself up. Its super-fast, it's like watching a chunk generating in a game.

Anyway. With the forest is not yet fully regenerated, I was still exposed nonetheless. But it doesn't seems like any of the Pegasus's notices my disguised. I see that they're starting to go away. I hope that they're thinking that the both of use were dead. If not, we really have to take care of that three Pegasus's, and it's not gonna be a fun time.

Right now I'm quite satisfied with the result, so I decided to head back. I think I've fooled them thinking that we're dead. At least we won't be dealing with them in the near future.

I'm really tempted to steal their fire attack skill, but I don't exactly know whether or not they will notice. If they notice, even if my disguised work, they will continue to hunt us down.

Anyway. I immediately head towards Lia that's already ahead of me. It seems like with her perseverance skill she could already at our destination, the Mother Tree. I believe that her strength or agility to run from the Pegasus's is enough, but I don't want her to see that I could transform to other monster, at least not now. It is also safer is she flee first.

Her perseverance skill is OP. She could basically do anything that I could do. She just have to ask for it. It does cost her a lot of MP at the very least. That skill is like a two sided blade. If she doesn't know anything about the skill, she could very well been dead. But right now, her usage of that skill is rather too careful to bring the full potential that it has to offer.

I've been running towards the ginormous tree for about 5 minutes now. I still take the appearance of the healer and the stats of the healer, but I change the SPD stats to match that of my cat form so no monster is attacking me. It seemed to work, but some of them tend to get a little bit suspicious sometimes, but I ignored it and kept on running.

#

[Lia's POV]

Phew!

Does it really only took me 4 minutes to travel such distance? Perseverance skill is really OP isn't it? Although, I'm super tired now. I think I spend quite a lot of my MP and SP while running. I hope Nate doesn't bring the party here.

Right now I'm standing in front of a ginormous tree, the Mother Tree. There's a staircase going around this tree that seems to end up in front of a gate made out of wood that's implanted in the tree itself. I wonder who will be on the other side of the door. I just hope that is not a boss or something.

To be safe, I'm still waiting for Nate. Even if he's 'slower' than me, I didn't mind it, it does gave me time to catch my breath and heal my MP and also SP. I'm also noticing that the surge of mana beyond this tree is far more incomparable to the "groves". So it does at least gave me a warning that what's beyond the gate up there, is something that's for sure more powerful than the both of us.

After 10 more minutes, the cat finally arrived.

"How'd it go?"

I manage to trick them thinking that we're dead.

"Nice! So that's what took you so long."

I mean... the distance is also quite far you know?

Is it really that far? I thought it was just like 1mi (1.6 km). How fast does the perseverance 'speed skill' make me move? The buff only lasted for 20 seconds though.

Anyway. You already explore something here yet?

"Nah, I haven't. I do feel the surge of mana here is greater than before."

Indeed. Let's explore the surrounding first. Then we move up that stairs.

Nod

With that we explore the area surrounding the tree. For me, I'm trying to find the source of the sudden change of mana volume, and for Nate he's just wandering around trying to find something interesting. In the end we found nothing. That just left us with going up the stair and meet whatever inside of it.

“So... You have any plans?”

Nope. If we die, we die.

“Hmm... okay then... I hope that Inonami didn't lie to us about the resurrection ability.”

We arrived in front of the gate and it automatically opens up. When the gate are fully open, we got greeted by a portal that's right in the opposite side of the gate. We decided to go in.

I thought that when we go inside, we will be immediately teleported into our destination. But when we step inside of the portal, we need to still walk forward while experiencing mild nausea. It feels like if you're going out from a roller coaster that specially made to make you vomit for the fifth time. Even Nate felt it. But soon after, we finally reach the end of the portal, thus we got teleported right in the middle of what it looks like a throne room.

“Hello little one. It seems that you are new here.”

I opened my nauseated eye and see that the one who greeted us was a slime. A rather huge slime. After rubbing my eyes, I finally be able to see the slime in full appearance.

It's like the slimes that we just fought but bigger. It wears a crown over its body. The slime seems to have wings and emit a huge aura around itself. This slime also seems to have the same crystal that make the slime super resilient, I know this because of its white body and the crystal is red colored. Though it seems like there's more than one crystal inside of that thing. It seems like there's 7? I don't know for sure, but I know that it's more than one.

It seems to have eyes that are both looks like fresh blood red color and two antenna with a glowing ball at the end of it. Overall, the appearance is quite cute, but I cannot just get over the fact that it's emitting such a huge aura.

Hey. Are we just going to stand here? I can't talk, so you do the talking.

This cat really said that to me? Ordering me around like you're the boss 'eh? Fine!

"U-uhm... I'm sorry, but how should I address your majesty?"

Smile, "You don't have to be so formal here. The one who made this dimension already told me that I have to be the one who are nice to you."

The slime doesn't have any leg but I feel that it's kneeling to me.

"O-oh... If that's the case then, thank you."

Boom. Nailed it.

"Shut up."

Hahahahaha...

"Okay then. We shall start our discussion."

This cat seriously want to die or something? I don't know what on the slime's mind. But it is really different from the other monster. First, this could literally talk. Second, when I tried to appraise it, the result only said the rank of the monster and their name. The name of this slime is, Axodines, the Everlasting Kaiser Slime. That's a long name to be honest with you.

Anyway. We've talked a little bit about what Inonami told this slime to do. To sum it up, the Kaiser told us that after going through the other side, we will be facing what they called the 'Treehulk'. As the name suggest, it is a tree, and a hulk at the same time. It's basically a giant living tree that has the monster rank at 4 star.

Then the Kaiser suggest us to go training on our own. At first I was skeptical about us being taken down one by one, by the enemy. But then Nate said that if Inonami were the ones who tell the slime what to do, he's pretty

sure that the Kaiser will not kill us. Guessing by Nate's judgment, I follow him nonetheless, it seems like his prediction has been successful for this trip, so I guess I could trust him.

The Kaiser then told us that he does have some training plan for me, but not for Nate. So, Nate decided that he will be heading back to the forest and train all by himself. In fact, he's already took of a couple hour ago. Right now I'm staying in a room that the Kaiser provided.

This room is the most luxurious room I've ever stayed in. There's 2 bedroom, one bathroom, living room, and a kitchen. A freaking kitchen! It doesn't cross my mind that I still need to eat. The fact that the orb kept our hunger filled is the one that makes us think that we're full. But eating does make your SP regenerate faster.

Tomorrow is the day I'll started to train. The first time we came here, the sun only just start rising. And now the sun already set. Nate also parted ways with me until I'm done with my training. The Kaiser told me that the training will last for about 1-2 weeks until we have to fight the tree hulk. He said that we have to at least raise our stats to the five hundredth. That's a leap right there.

Before Nate part ways, I've manage to appraise him to see how much we really need to raise our stats:

Nate ***, *Felis catus* Lv.1**

Age : 3 Months

Stats :

HP: 125 / 125 SPD: 180

ATK: 100 DEF: 15

MP: 255/255 SP: 195 / 195

Avg. 168

Skill: Title:

Envy Holder of Envy (1%)

Telepathy Lv.2

~

Lia ***, Human Lv.2**

Age : 10 years

Stats :

HP: 170/170 SPD: 95

ATK: 145 DEF: 24

MP: 130/160 SP: 163/ 163

Avg. 159

Skill:

Title:

Perseverance

Swordplay Lv.4

Ruler of Perseverance

Pure Determination Mana Absorp Lv.3

Unyielding

To sum it up, Nate average stats went up by 68 and leveled up his telepathy skill to level 2. And my stats went up by 51 and leveled up my mana absorption and swordplay skill by 2 levels.

In conclusion, in this next two weeks. We have to raise our average stats by at least 340 points. That's insane. Though, I'm kind of intrigued by what kind of training that the Kaiser has planned.

I got myself up on to the bed. The room has spare clothes, so I don't have to wear my worn of clothes to bed. I worry a bit about my previous world and hope that no one miss me. Then before I know it, I already vast asleep.

#

[Nate's POV]

At last, I'm on my own again. I have to raise my stats up to the five hundredth by my own in this 2 weeks? Before I depart, she said that I have to raise my stats at least 340 points. She said that forgetting that I couldn't see my own stats because I don't have the freaking appraisal skill.

Let's see... What could I do to quickly raise my stats? I guess I could just farm monster like usual. I also could kill off those Pegasus and get stronger that way. But I'm sure those Pegasus didn't have enough stats to where it goes beyond the five hundredth.

Well... At least that will still raise my stats nonetheless. Let's see what I could do to defeat the Pegasus. I could just use the envy skill to steal their

wing manipulating skill and their fire magic. I don't know what the wing skill will do for me, because I don't have any wings. But at least the fire magic skill will come in handy right?

At last I settle down in the grove and sleep. I take the appearance and stats that of the slime so nothing will attack me while I sleep. The next day will be me fighting those Pegasus. I hope if I die the resurrection works.

CHAPTER 6

LUXURY AND TROUBLE

1

[Lia's POV]

The morning has come. It's been quite a while since I've woke up on a bed. This feeling is dangerous! I couldn't lift a single finger from this bed! It's too cozy!

Anyway. I manage to lift my body up from the bed, somehow. I look to the kitchen and see if there's something I could make. I then see that there's a bread in the counter, it doesn't look like the type of bread that goes with a jam, so I just eat it right off the bat.

I knew that the Kaiser will call me to the training ground soon. So I take the opportunity to take a short bath. The bathroom here is so luxurious, there's 3 sinks, 1 bathtub, and 2 shower! Who the heck two shower?!

I will not describe how it feels, I don't want any of you pervert fantasize about. It conclusion it felt nice.

Anyway. I'm in the dining room right now feasting with the Kaiser. He said that I'll be training about a technique called 'Disintegration'. From what he explain, it's basically a skill that separate the body and the soul of the target, therefore sending them to death quickly. Oh yeah, the Kaiser is a guy that's why I said 'he'.

Hey voice. I want to ask, can you use the disintegration skill?

<Notice. Skill: Disintegration, could be replicated by sacrificing MP, SP, HP and the user will fall unconscious after the target has been disintegrated>

Oh? Hmm...

Hey voice. If I were to have the disintegration skill, what side effect will it have?

<Notice. If an individual were to have the disintegration skill, the only side effect that it has is that, the user will not be able to use magic again for the day>

Hmm... It seems like I get more benefit by obtaining the skill rather than just replicating it. I do have two weeks to obtain the skill, might as well try it first before submitting to the last resort, replicating it.

Oh yeah, all this time, the Kaiser is explaining to me on how shall I train in order to get the perseverance skill.

“... So as I was saying the disintegration skill is a skill that’s super hard to master, and only a couple people know about this skill. The fastest way for you to obtain it is by understanding the basic of holy magic. Holy magic is...”

Throughout those mindless rambling, I decided to just ask the world voice.

Hey voice. What is the fastest way and most efficient way to obtain and master the disintegration skill?

<Notice. Skill: Disintegration, a skill that let the user to split the soul from the body. This skill could be obtain by the person who know how soul are and how it works. The person who know how the soul work could have a potential in getting the disintegration skill. Other way is to study about holy magic. To master this skill, the user only just have to use it over and over again>

Hey voice. Could you write me a book on what is necessary for me to obtain the disintegration skill?

<Notice. To write the book, material and SP will be sacrifice. Insufficient material: Paper, Ink.>

Smiles (Lia smile)

“... Therefore the user could mastered it super-fast. But, with this kind of method there’s a lot of ris-”

“Sir. You don’t need to trouble yourself explaining to me on how to get the disintegration skill. You mention that there’s library right? Rather than telling me the full process on how to get the disintegration skill, how about you tell me where the library is and I’m just going to start from reading the book for holy magic.”

“Oh! You want it like step by step rather than just doing everything to make you obtain the skill faster huh?”

“Precisely your honor.”

“Hahaha... Once again, you don’t have to be so formal here! One of my maid will guide you towards to library after we’re done feasting. You could head there with her.”

After he said that, one of the maid that’s on standby nod her head towards the king as if she knows that she’s the one the Kaiser meant. And with reflex I nod back to the maid.

Anyway. I’m saying that just because I want to get an empty book from the library with some ink and bring them to my room to create the book that the world voice said. I also will borrow the book that the Kaiser told me just to compare the two and see which one is more profound.

After we’re done dining, the Kaiser left the room and head towards the throne room because he said that there’s going to be a meeting, while I head towards the library with a maid. This ‘tree’ is bigger in the inside compared to the outside. But guessing by the teleportation gate that connect this ‘tree’ to the grove, I wouldn’t be surprised if we weren’t inside the tree that we’ve gone through. But just in case, I use my ball to appraise my current location:

<Current Place: Mother Tree

Possible enemies : -

Area Guardian : **Kaiser, King of All Everlasting Slime**

Description : **A safe area before the frigid arches. Guarded by Kaiser, the king of all everlasting slime.**

End of Report->

That's what the ball gave me. It seems like I'm indeed inside of the mother tree. Anyway, I'm here, in front of the gallery.

The maid suddenly stop right in front of me.

“For you to talk with Kaiser-sama with no manners!”

Huh? What? Why so sudden?

“U-uhm... Wha-” I muttered.

“Shut up! If you want to get something you desire, you have to face me first to prove that you're worthy of the knowledge from this library.”

This girl is weird. What are you saying? Are you the one who's in possession of this library?

“U-uh...” Honestly, I don't know what and how to give a response to that. I also want to appraise her, just in case.

Hey voice. Appraise her.

<Notice. Using skill: Appraisal...>

Rokujuu Nanatsu, Human Lv.27

Age : **23 Year**

Stats :

HP: 376 / 376 SPD: 90

ATK: 211 DEF: 30

MP: 291/291 SP: 306 / 306

Avg. 296

Skill:

Housework Lv.6

Scary! What kind of stats is that? Do I even have to fight this girl? Although it's kinda funny that there's a skill called 'Housework'.

“U-um... The Kaiser said himself that I shouldn’t use honorifics. You probably know, every time I try to use honorific or be polite, he cuts in and said that I shouldn’t be too formal. If you really care about him, why don’t you realize this?”

The maid seems to stop. Are you done throwing a tantrum? Honestly. What the heck was that?!

“You understand now?”

“Y-yeah... I’m sorry...”

“Now, can you show me where’s the door to library is?”

“Yeah. It’s right there.” She pointed out towards a hallway. “But you need to defeat me first. That’s what the Kaiser said.”

Oh... Now that makes sense why she throw a tantrum just then.

“You’re way more powerful than me. What does the Kaiser meant by ‘defeat you’? Do I really need to kill you? I’m sure that’s not what the Kaiser intended right?”

“The only thing he want me to do is to defeat you.”

“Can you at least bring me right in front of the library door first?”

“S-sure...”

At least she still listen to me. Hmm... what does the Kaiser intended to do by sending her to defeat me?

Hey voice. I need you to make me be able to phase into any ‘walls’ 20 seconds from now, for 10 seconds.

<Notice. Using skill: Permeation, the user can phase through any object that’s desired, 20 seconds from now, for 10 seconds>

Hey! The voice recommend me something way better!

“Hey, I guess the your term ‘defeat’ is when you cannot stop me from going through the library doors, and my term of defeat is when I cannot get inside the library don’t you think?”

“Hmm... I guess. Here we are. From now on I’m going to stop you from entering the library!”

<Skill: Permeation is activated for the next 10 seconds>

My speed stats is slightly above her. So I can just run towards the door hoping I catch her off guard and could just phase through the walls. I slowly walk towards the doors.

“You know, I think what the Kaiser is trying to teach you is that... Don’t just easily trust anyone.”

“!” *Arrgh!*

With that she went of charging against me. I also charged towards the library doors. Because my speed stats is slightly higher, I could outrun her therefore phasing straight through the library doors. When I’m done phasing through the door, before I look inside of the library, I shout through the door, “Don’t worry. You’re new here right? The Kaiser will forgive you, this is a learning experience for you, make sure to take notes. I’m also not a bad guy so don’t worry too much!” And with that, I hear a sigh of relief from the opposite side of the door.

Anyway. When I turn myself around I also let out a sigh of relief. I thought that she might trick me going to another room, but I guess she just need a little more training before she could pull off something like that.

This library is rather a huge one. There’s immediately two staircase going through the second floor and in the middle of the two staircase there’s seems to be a receptionist desk.

“Ohoho... I guess you could really get pass that maid huh?”

Oh no... I know who’s this voice belongs to. I look to the second floor.

“That one is a new maid or something?” I ask to the slime that’s on the second floor.

“Not really. Hmm... Sure, but there’s someone ‘newer’ than her.” He responded.

As I've guessed, it's the freaking Kaiser. That freaking slime is sipping a cup of a tea while talking to me. I thought the Kaiser really have meeting, but I guess I could also get fooled.

"Why is that maid so easy to manipulate then?" I responded.

"I guess there's something to learn every single day huh? I'm also surprised that you could just phase through the doors just like that."

"So... What about the book? Could I just request it?" I ignore the question. I don't want the Kaiser to know that I basically have a skill that could create any other skill known to the system. I don't trust him enough for that.

"Yeah! Actually, I've already prepare anything that you need. Come here." The slime seems to give me a gesture in order to persuade me to come over.

"You sure this is not a trap?"

"Hahaha... I promised that this is not a trap."

I walked up the stair and see the book that the Kaiser had prepared me. I then quickly ask if I could study in my own room and also get a blank book and an ink for 'writing a memo'. The Kaiser easily agree with that and without much longer I'm already heading back to my room with a dozen book. This thing is really heavy.

Anyway. I finally made it in to my room. Before I create 'the book', I decided to read the book that the Kaiser has recommended me first, and when I want to go to bed I will make 'the book'. Just in case it uses all of my MP, I could just fall asleep.

The first book that I decided to read is about holy magic. It said that holy magic has some similarity with light magic. Where both of them have the same embodiment, which is light. Because it has the same embodiment (light), the magic could be broken down to seven 'color' which are red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and violet. The book explain that these seven 'color' are the origin of light and holy magic. I mean, they're not wrong... I do know that ROYGBIV are the seven color of the rainbow, which

is the dispersion of light. But I didn't expect that light or holy magic could be broken down to seven different color just like a rainbow.

The book said that the main difference about holy magic and light magic was that light magic user could make their magic stronger, while holy magic could not. They said that the power of holy magic is already determined at birth. But the book tells that there's a way to enhance the power of holy magic. The person just have to be able to break down the magic to the seven original color and enhance every single color one by one. It said that by doing this technique, one could enhance their holy magic to a much stronger state. Finally, the book said that every single magic also works the same, it just that every single magic have their own origin color.

Then I read about how to obtain holy magic. For short, holy magic usually is a talent that was given, just like where some people have a special connection to the system, both of this is a talent that was given right at birth. But the book explains that there is a way to obtain a holy magic. That is through 'baptism'. It said that 'baptism' is a ritual, or rather, an offering from someone sacrificing all of their magic capabilities and skill, in order to get holy magic.

Yeah. No thank you. I ain't sacrificing my perseverance skill and my title to just get one shitty skill that I could obviously easily replicate.

Anyway. The day went by pretty fast as I was reading the book. Most of the time, the book did intrigued me, but sometimes it just doesn't make any sense.

There's some maid going in and out of my room every now and then to check on me and bring some food. So I don't have to worry about starving. Not that I could starve when I have this freaking ball in my possession. But I still have the satisfaction of eating tasty food, so I didn't decline their offer either.

When dawn finally set, I order the maid that come here to not disrupt me until morning come. The maid then ask whether or not I want any last meal for the day, and I response them by shaking my head. The maid understood and give me one last bow. To be honest, that's a tough decision, I really enjoy

the food here, so denying the fact that I will not be able to enjoy the food here for the rest of the night kind of saddened me a bit.

Anyway. It's time for me to create 'the book'.

Hey voice. I've manage to collect the material. I'm counting on you.

<Notice. Creating a summery about holy magic and disintegration skill in order to obtain skill...>

<Consuming paper and writing material...>

Hmm... I've never seen the voice taking so much step to create something, except for the time when I got teleported to the other world. This is quite rare. As I was saying that, I could see that the blank book that I've prepare and also the ink was being absorbed by something. I'm also beginning to feel very tired, I guess it really does take a lot of MP to make something like this.

<Command was successfully executed. Replacing object...>

With that, I see a similar book appeared out of thin air. The book doesn't have any label in it. I manage to open the book briefly before falling down to bed and passing out.

'Anata no shukufuku no geijutsu o shūtoku suru anata wa anata no nanatsu no gen no iro o shoyū surudeshou'

The first page looked like a spell chant, I manage to read it before I've fallen asleep. I don't know what it'll do, I'm too tired to think about that now. Let's just see when I woke up.

<Skill Granted: Disintegration, the user can split the soul of an entity from the body>

<Title Granted: Master of Holy Magic, Have profound knowledge about Holy magic and soul knowledge, the holder could use the skill; Disintegration to split the soul form the body>

#

[Nate's POV]

I've finally found the Pegasus's nest. It's quite deep inside of the forest. I could clearly see that there's about 10 Pegasus currently on standby.

Obviously I'm currently disguised as a monster, so that the Pegasus will not discover my presence here.

Right now, I'm pretty sure they're all in the range of my envy skill. I could use it right now, but that will just screams war. I'm still thinking of what is the best way to approach them. I could just wait until one of them decided to go away and follow it instead. But it seems like they're just will not go anywhere. To be honest, there's already plenty of grass here for them to feed on, so I guess they will only go out if there's a threat, just like when we fought the slimes. Even then, they will not go by themselves.

Hmm... What should I do...?

I'm having such a hard time thinking that even the author doesn't know what to write here.

Anyway. After sometime, I decided to back up and start killing of some slime and resurrecting them using the healer body to make them my minion. After doing it multiple times, I finally able to collect an army of 50 slimes. I hope this would be enough to keep the Pegasus's at bay while I use my envy skill on one of them.

I bring the slime near the Pegasus's nest. I obviously spread them a bit to make it feels like it's natural. Because, I'm pretty sure the Pegasus could detect presence that goes near their territory.

This will not buy me a lot of time, I really need to get this done quickly.

While still in the appearance of the healer body, I simultaneously order all the slime to attack and immediately use my envy skill.

As I expected, almost all the Pegasus's immediately realize that they're being attacked. The one Pegasus that doesn't react is the one I use my envy skill on. Once I use this skill, the Pegasus will still live, but they would know that their skill has been stolen.

After a couple of seconds, I finally manage to pull the skill out of that one Pegasus. I'm surprised that it immediately collapse. And with that, my position gets noticed. How you asked? It's because when I use the envy skill, my mana surges through the air and causes my location to be leaked.

I immediately turn back to my cat form. Because of its aerodynamic body, I manage to move faster, not only that, the cat body is black which makes it even harder to spot. I of course could use other form and combined it with my stats, but after some calculation that I've done before engaging the battle, I decided to go back to my cat form.

After I sucked all of the Pegasus's skill, I suddenly grow a pair of wings.

Huh? How? Does the wing from the Pegasus's actually a skill? I thought Pegasus's were born with wings. Wait, the description about the Pegasus's says that the Pegasus could manipulate their wing feathers. Does that mean not only I could use this wing, I also could manipulate the wing for attack and defense? That's pretty cool.

As I kept on running, the Pegasus's start to catch up with me. I wonder, Lia said that SPD stats are higher than the Pegasus's, so how could they catch up to me? I guess there's a possibility that Lia lied to me, but whatever, it's already too late to complain now. My goal now is either to run away, or learn how to use the plasma attack and my wings that I just stole from the Pegasus.

I decided to multi task. First, I try to move my wings while running. While the Pegasus's catching up on to me, I also quickly learn how to use my wings.

For what you say? You see, this wing ability is quite handy for me to jump to higher places. Pegasus have a body of a freaking horse, so they couldn't just climb and hold on to trees. While a cat body is way more versatile.

After sometime, I quickly learn how to use my wings, I basically have to somewhat move my backbone. Right now I could flap them quite easily. But I haven't tried to fly yet. I could technically do it right now, but the chance of me failing is high. The moment of truth is whether or not I could immediately use this. If this fail, the Pegasus's will catch up to me.

I quickly flap my wing and jump at the same time. My target destination is a tree branch that's quite high up, at least it's quite high up for cats. To my surprise, I manage to reach it. I'm so surprised that I actually pause for a little bit. But immediately realize that I'm being chased, therefore continue fleeing, this time I flee from one tree branch to another like a Tarzan. It seems that

my flying speed follow my SPD stats, so I could somewhat still outrun the Pegasus's.

At this point the Pegasus's start attacking with their feathers. I also noticed that one or two of them flew up to the sky. Probably preparing the plasma attack.

Realizing that, I quickened my pace while also trying to use the same plasma attack that the Pegasus's use and aim it at the sky. Obviously I couldn't, because I don't know how to activate it yet. I notice that the Pegasus have 2 ways of running or chasing, the normal running, and charging. While charging, it looks like their speed is multiplied by two. But the downside is, they couldn't turn. So if they're starting to charge at me, I just have to turn a sharp corner.

I'm still trying to use the plasma attack, but every time I want to use it, it failed. The only sign that I was actually using the plasma skill is that my body glows and become hotter. But every time I move, that feeling goes away. I'm starting to worry that I could only use this skill only if I stand still. That would make sense, because even the Pegasus's are doing it. They must charge up their skill first and then shooting it. But when they charge their skill, it seems that they must stop.

This plasma skill is indeed quite a powerful attack, therefore it makes sense if I need to stand still and 'charge up' my skill first before attacking. But as you probably knows, there's no time for me to stop. If I stop, I will get caught by the Pegasus's.

Right now, I'm basically running in a huge circle. My plan was just to wait until the Pegasus that were charging the plasma attack above us are done charging and ready to use its skill. If my feeling are correct, the Pegasus's that were chasing me will flee in order to give space for the attack. They will also flee to safety. At that moment I hope that they will be occupied by their fleeing, and I could safely turn into a monster without them noticing. I could then use that time to practice 'my' plasma skill.

Lo and behold, the Pegasus's that were trying to chase after me are now running away. After sometime, I then turn into a healer then start running outside of the potential blast radius. Knowing that the Pegasus were trying to

attack me, I'm probably in the middle of the blast radius now. I kept on running while still in the healer form, I also use the healer stats, so I couldn't run that fast. Right now, I'm just trusting my faith upon my envy skill.

After some time has passed. The Pegasus finally blast their attack, destroying a huge chunk of the forest again. "Did they really fall for the same trick twice?" I Muttered. Yeah, when I'm in the healer form, I could speak just like a normal human. I also wonder could the other healer also speak like human.

Anyway. It looks like they're still on guard, I decided to run back to their hideout. I want to finish of the Pegasus that passed out because of my envy skill. With that, I could turn myself into one of them.

When I arrived at their 'nest' I see that there's no one here. It looks like the Pegasus's were still trying to find me. Anyways, I turn myself into a slime and swallowed the Pegasus. My surface area is enough to completely surround the Pegasus. When I'm doing this, I could attack the Pegasus inside me with magic attack and it wouldn't make any noise. The only downside is that, well, at least right now, I couldn't move, so I really need to make this fast.

I also tried to charge up 'my' plasma skill and shooting it straight into the Pegasus that's inside me. Surprise-surprise! It freaking work, though the attack power is not as powerful as what they've just done, it still worked nonetheless. I think the problem is that I didn't charge it long enough. This time I'll take my sweet time and charge up this skill, long enough to where the damage will be at least the same as that crater inducing attack.

Even without attacking the target inside my body, my inside are toxic enough to deteriorate the Pegasus body. But by using skill to attack the Pegasus, I could kill it much faster. If I were to just use my slime digestion, I will also get some 'nutrient' from the Pegasus. But, right now my main goal is to kill it fast enough before the other starts to make their way back.

According to my calculation, to make that crater inducing attack, I need to charge this skill for approximately 1-2 minutes. It's honestly not that long, the only reason why it seems so long to cast in a battle because, you could very well be killed in that time span.

Anyway, it has been 2 minutes now, I immediately release the charged up skill and when it hit the Pegasus, I felt that my body will just explode. The impact of the crater inducing attack literally stretch my body so much that it expand about 1-2 meter in diameter. I also felt a giant surge of mana exiting my body. With that, I'm sure that the other Pegasus's will come here any moment.

After I make sure that the Pegasus is dead, I immediately try transforming my body. Sure enough, it worked. I look at the Pegasus body. The body has been turned to smithereens. You can't tell that, that is a former Pegasus body. With that, I'm pretty positive that my disguise will somewhat work. I'm going to act like I just kill the target and move on from there.

A few moments later, the other Pegasus finally arrived here. They seemed super confused. I mean, I could totally understand that. One moment ago I was basically passed out, now I'm awake and even manage to kill the cat. I don't know if they have a brain or not, but I'm super suspicious right now don't you think?

One Pegasus approach me, fully examine my body, and then go back to the pack. It seems like its whispering something to the other Pegasus's. Sure enough, a couple moments later they started attacking me with their wing manipulation.

Hmm... I wonder what went wrong... Is it the sudden transformation or is there something wrong with my envy disguise skill?

I was thinking that, whilst running away from them. This time I could do a charge and make my movement speed as fast as the other Pegasus's and I could also switch back to my cat form if I want to turn and dodge. Therefore, right now, the chase is a little bit more hectic for me. I'm constantly changing my form from Pegasus, to cat, to Pegasus again, and so on. But none of their attack even able to hit me. What are the benefit using this technique you say? Well, right now they couldn't even get near me. On top of that, I'm actually out running them. I'll make sure to leave my trace behind though.

My next plan of action is just to run away from them. But I also don't want them to stop chasing after me. I plan to run away from them just enough

to launch another full power plasma attack to them and hoping I could swipe them clean.

After knowing I've already create quite the distance between us, I started swiping of some slime I came across. Right now I'm powerful enough to kill the slime just by swiping them with my cat claws, while I was running. Why you asked? It seems that I regenerate MP every time I kill a creature, I'm obviously still absorbing the energy that surges throughout this forest. But killing some monster also boost my MP regeneration. Not to mention the plasma attack that I used to kill that one Pegasus already depleted my MP by a significant amount. I know this because I literally feel that there's a huge portion of my energy being blasted away right after I use that attack.

If my calculation is correct, I could already use the plasma attack again. But for extra measure, I'm going to regenerate my MP just a little more. I also need to make more gap between me and the Pegasus's. If I were to stop here right now, the Pegasus's will catch up to me in just mere seconds, that's not enough for me to make those crater inducing attack is it.

I honestly don't know how far I needed to go anymore. I might as well depleted basically all of my SP to create the maximum gap. But after so much running, I honestly don't know how far I'll be able to go. The Pegasus's have SP stats twice as high as mine. It will only be a matter of time until they caught up to me.

It seems like my SP stats finally ran out. I make up my mind and shot out a surge of mana towards what I imagine the position of the Pegasus's. Immediately I started charging up my attack.

...

If I remember, this whole thing happen not long after my reunion with Lia and Inonami. Not even a day had gone by and Inonami already sent us here. Honestly, is she on a hurry or what? When I think back, this is absurd. I don't know what's going on inside her head. But I doubt is something that I could understand. Not because I can't understand, but because she couldn't explain it. I guess...

Anyway. I'm already hearing the Pegasus's marching here. They sure are faster than what I imagine. But it's already been more than 2 minutes. That

should be enough time. This one's not going to be a grandiose win, it will not be satisfying. But at least I could defeat them right?

I'm firing this nuke attack from the ground. Why you asked? My freaking SP is basically zero right now, if I were to fly, I'd be more exhausted. Anyway, because I'm on the ground right now, I'm sure that I'd get some of the attack on me to.

There they are. I finally able to see them marching towards here.

"Nothing personal guys. I don't even have any grudge towards you guys. In fact, you guys are the ones that should be holding a grudge against me."

"But this is for my survival. I'm sorry."

"Extermination Ray!"

With that, I shot out the blast. The next second, I could only see white in front of me. And after the blinding light dissipate, I could see that every tree in front of me got vaporize, even the ground, everything got vaporize. The crater that it had left was about 100 meters wide and about 1 km long arching upwards.

With that kind of attack, the next second I could only feel that my body is falling. I guess I'm falling to sleep. It make sense I guess. Because I can't move a single inch of my body, I can only wait until this drowsiness makes me fall asleep. I really am pathetic.

CHAPTER 7

'SPARRING' SOME PRO FIGHTERS

1

[Lia's POV]

I woke up quite early today. I don't know why. I think it's because I've fallen asleep quite early? For perspective how early this is, the sun here hasn't risen up yet.

Anyway. There's a new book in front of me. I guess the voice really did make the book while I was sleeping. I just hope that no one actually comes inside this room while I was 'asleep', because that will not be a pleasant sight. Seeing a 10 year old girl sleep walking, creating a book, and using some weird magic. Honestly, I would freak out. I'd think that the girl is possessed.

Anyway. After I woke up and gather all of my consciousness, I immediately use appraisal on myself. I see that I've acquired the Disintegration skill, I also have acquired the 'Master of Holy Magic' title. Does that mean I could also use holy magic? I don't know, let's test I right now.

Actually, before that, I think I'm gonna read the book first. I don't actually know how to activate the holy magic yet, let alone use it. So, I ended up reading the book for about 3-4 hours. I'm not the type of girl that like reading, but this book just really stick out to me, I don't know why.

The book has a list of spell that I can try to chant in order to use holy magic. I kept on reading it, in the end the book explain to me how to strengthen any magic. It's the same as what the library book explains, but one factor that differentiate the two of them is that, this book (the one 'I' create) also explain on the step by step process on how to break holy magic to its origin color. There's also a step by step process on how to strengthen every 'color'. Because I was too immersed by the book, I was already been called by the Kaiser to dine with him at the dining hall.

There's a maid that always come to my room in order to give me information about today agenda. As I expected, today agenda is the same as yesterday. Basically I was informed that today I got the permission to read books in order to get the basic idea of what holy magic and disintegration skill is. Little did they know, right now I only needed to strengthen my holy magic and experiment using the disintegration skill.

Anyway. I quickly prepare myself up and head straight to the dining hall. When I arrived I see that the Kaiser already have a seat reserved for me. I said that because today there's extra people present here. The dining table are shaped like an ellipse, where the supposedly head of the table are reserved for the Kaiser. Right now I'm sitting on the other end of the table, which mean I'm going to be the center of the attention right now. A 10 year old girl being the center of attention of a royalty. If that doesn't give me anxiety I don't know what could.

For today's breakfast they've prepared some sort of a meat. When I asked Kaiser "What kind of meat", he just say that it's some sort of steak. Well, there's nothing I could do except for accepting it or declining it. I don't fancy requesting a food okay?

A few moment has passed. There seems to be three more people that come in here.

"Oh yeah, these people are the one that's going to be in charge for your training the following days and week. The red hair one is Vargas, The ones wearing paladin uniform is Atro, and the blue haired girl is Selena" The Kaiser explained.

So these three people are Vargas, Atro, and Selena. The Kaiser explain that Vargas would be the one that train me to use my sword, Atro is in charge for holy magic, and Selena is in charge for training magic in general.

The three figure does give a powerful aura though. Their attire also adds in to that aura, giving them the sense of nobility and pride. Their face is so welcoming, that I don't feel any ill intent from them as well. Anyway, they quickly take a seat and joins in on our breakfast.

"Right now I'm only going to introduce you to these people, of course you also need more time to study about holy magic and stuff. I wouldn't be forcing you to train with them today. At least you know them first right? It also wouldn't be too much of a problem for you to know, who will be in charge of your training right?" The Kaiser then continue.

"Um... Actually, we can start training from now on. Although, I'm not sure if I can use holy magic just yet." I responded.

"I could teach you on how to cast holy magic. It might boost your progression as well. I could also give you some tips right off the bat, on what you're lacking." Said a guy wearing gold paladin armor. I think his name is Atro?

"Well, let's see. I think all of the decision are all on the girl hand right?" Said the girl with blue hair. I don't exactly know her age, but she looks pretty young, maybe in her early 20's? She also seems to be interested in me, I don't know why though.

After the girl spoke, all attention move over to me. I turn my gaze downwards as if I'm thinking. I honestly don't know, what to do. I could already use holy magic, but reading 'the book' also can be considered as training right? I don't know how much these people will help, but I feel like if I spend more time with 'the book', I could improve faster then what they could've teach me. Obviously I also need practical practice, so in the end this training is unavoidable.

"I think we could start this training early. But I'd like to spend today's time just by reading the book that Kaiser have lend me." I responded.

“The girl said it. No training for today. You shall not beg her okay, you training maniac.” Finally, the red fire haired guy talked. I thought he’s mad at me or something. But his tone of voice is surprisingly not that harsh. His body is quite rough and big, so to hear him having a normal voice is quite surprising.

With that short dialogue, it seems like the Kaiser and the blue haired girl almost broke out laughing. Well, it seems that they’re not that pushy about this training. I appreciate that. I could actually spend my time to just reading ‘the book’ today, and not having to worry about anything else.

After breakfast, the Kaiser left the dining hall and go straight to the throne’s room, while the three people said that they’re heading back to their respective room. I also excuse myself from the dining hall, leaving only the maid that have cleaning duty behind.

When I arrived at my room, I see that there’s the blue haired girl standing in front of my room. “U-um... Do you have any matter with me? Um...?” I want to continue what I’m saying, but I genuinely forgot her name.

“It’s Selena. My name is Selena. I don’t really have any emergency matter or that sort of thing. I just like visiting your room today, I hope I didn’t bother you.”

“Nah, It’s okay. I didn’t plan to read right off the bat. I haven’t even enter my room yet right?” Then I continue, “Perhaps, do you need me to do something?”

“I only want to see just how much magic potential you have. You could just cast a spell and I could give an approximation on how much potential it has. Perhaps this will make my job easier, ‘cause I get a little understanding about your magic on the first hand.” She respond. She also seems to be blushing. I don’t know why, but it seems like I’m getting a weird mixed up feeling about her. Is she the type that swing ‘that way’? I hope not.

“Sure! Would it be fine to cast magic inside of this place though?” I answered.

“You don’t have to cast something huge. You could just cast a simple spell, like a ‘tiny fireball’ or something.”

After thinking for a little bit, I decided to do what she said and cast a little fire from the tip of my finger. Obviously I asked the world voice for it and even specifically said that I wanted it to be the purest of fire magic. In the end a little blue fire appear out of the tip of my finger. I then realize that in this world I haven't seen any blue fire, I've only seen red fire, sometimes orange and yellow, but not blue.

"Hmm... I haven't seen a fire so blue for so long! The last time I see it was about 1000 years ago, when a girl came by and took over this entire realm and sealed us away." She then respond. It seems like she have lived much longer than I expected.

I'm not too interested about the girl that conquer this realm, let's be honest, we all think its Inonami right? Yeah, that's why I'm not that interested. Anyway, I asked her "How'd I do?" She then said that I might be as formidable as 'the girl'. But she, herself doesn't know.

'How formidable is the system?' is my question. That tiny blue flame doesn't seemed to cost me much MP, yet it is said to be as powerful as one of Inonami attack? Anyway, I invite Selena to my room but she refuse politely. I guess she does have her own things to do.

I enter my room and start studying for the day, sometime taking a snack when a maid comes into my room, without realizing that the day almost over. It seems that there's 2 more original color other than the 7 color of the rainbow. That's white and black, but it's said that both of that color are born after mixing all the other 7 colors. It does make sense though, white is basically the color of light, while black is the result if you mix every color, and the more color you mix the darker it gets.

Hey voice. If I could mix up color at will, does it mean that I can create any magic, even my original magic?

<Notice. The mixing of original color will result in many form of magic, if an individual manage to fully manipulate and mix every origin color and create any magic, the individual might transcend the system itself>

Ooh! What do you mean by 'transcend the system'? You mean if I could manipulate them I could be stronger than the voice? That's kinda broken af.

But of course, in order to do that, you need to train to be worthy of being stronger than the system. It ain't easy to do that alright.

Anyway. The sun already start setting, I had lunch and pre-dinner in my own room, as I was saying, there's maid going in and out, that's when I had my lunch and pre-dinner. Right now I'm experimenting on powering up one of the original color. What color you asked? I don't know, I can't decide. As I expected. Even manipulating and strengthening one of the color is hard enough. 'The book' does explain on how to do it step by step, but every step is super hard. It's like when you just started riding a mini quad cycle and now you're thrown into an oversized manual motorcycle.

So what I'm supposed to do is to extract one of the original color from the holy magic. It said that I have to make an image in my head and try to split the seven color from the holy light. Because I was from another world, all I was thinking is like what make rainbow happen, I was thinking of the dispersion of light. When I make an image inside my head, the holy magic that came out was not white light color, most of the time it's rainbow colored. So I think I'm still progressing. I was able to make a rainbow. Now I have to take that rainbow colored ball of magic and take every single unique color from it. I don't know how to do that though. The book does say what to do, but I don't really understand what the book meant.

I decided to take a break from that and head to the dining hall. The Kaiser called out to me that we're gonna have a meeting discussing for tomorrow. So I came in to the hall and there's already the two guy that will train me and Selena sitting with the Kaiser, waiting for me.

"You finally arrived!" The Kaiser said.

"Y-yeah, I'm sorry I'm kinda late." I then respond

"I think we're just early." The Kaiser then said, "So, about tomorrow, when will you be available for training? And which will you prefer to do first?"

I take a seat at a random chair and then said, "I will be available right after breakfast until the training finishes. As for what I'd like to train first, I think I'd do magic then sword fighting, and finally holy magic."

“Is there any reason as of why you choose magic first and holy magic last?” The Kaiser respond.

“I choose magic first because I’d like to know how far I’m capable of using magic and sword is not my strong aspect. As for why holy magic last, I still couldn’t get a grasp on how to use it, hehe...” I respond with a little embarrassment.

“Sure then, we’ll take preparation for tomorrow. Oh, and also, there’s no breakfast here tomorrow. Breakfast will be sent to your room personally.” The Kaiser said.

As tempting it is to ask ‘why?’ I ignore it anyway and just said “Okay.” Then continue eating in silence. It seems that the three trainer also didn’t said a thing. They are either too immersed to the food, too sleepy to be awake, or just don’t want to talk. Right now the only sound that you could hear in the dining hall was just a like a metallic object hitting a ceramic plate, it’s the sound of fork and knife hitting the ceramic dinner plate.

After dinner we all head straight to our room. When I arrived at my room, I immediately collapsed to my bed and sleep. I don’t know why, but I’m exhausted. I only read books today, yet I’m exhausted. I really hate book that much huh?

...

“Good morning!” I opened the window curtain that block the rising sun from my room and look at the scenery. I will never ever get bored from seeing this scenery. Anyway, I take a seat and start reading the book again until one of the maid bring my breakfast here. I wouldn’t dare to practice dispersing holy magic. If one of the maid come in here, I don’t want them to see that I could use holy magic, even dispersing them.

To be honest, the paladin guy is probably already be able to disperse the holy magic to their original color. But I don’t want them to find out yet. So I ended up only reading the book and not practicing anything.

Hey voice. Make a super hard spherical barrier around me, maybe 5cm thick.

<Notice. Creating super hard barrier with thickness; 5cm>

Why you asked? Ever since I woke up and open the curtain, I sense a strong magic was being casted right outside my room.

Is this what they meant by 'breakfast'?

This is more like 'breakfasting my room' (Ba Dum Tss). Okay I'll stop.

Anyway. I manage to safely hide 'the book' and get it inside the barrier with me. So it will not be turned to ashes. I decided to get as far away from the door, in case the blast was aimed at the door. At least if I stay away, the blast will not be aimed straight to me right? Even with this barrier, I'll still take extra precaution. You cannot be too safe right?

Bang!

Not long after, I hear a loud bang. Even if I'm ready, that bang still startled me. From what it seems, the spell that was casted was some sort of an explosion spell.

"Can you knock first at least?" I shout at the source of the bang, thinking that whatever set those spell was still stationed there.

"You still have that much confident even after I attack you with my powerful spell huh?" The sound are coming from outside of my room. The sound, sounds like it's underestimating me. So I play along.

"Urggh..." I let out a pitiful groan.

"From what it seems, even if you have high potential, if you cannot defend yourself from that spell, you aren't worthy for me to teach." The smoke is clearing out. The sound also becomes clearer, it's a woman voice.

"..." I stay silence.

The smoke and dust from the blast was clearing out. There I see a blue haired girl. It's Selena, I haven't got my breakfast yet. Why is this girl decided to destroy my room? I didn't sign up for this!

Anyway. After the smoke clears out further, she will know that the attack literally do nothing to me. Even without this barrier, the attack will only leave out a little dust on me. It seems like, 'I avoiding the door' does make a difference after all!

When the dust and smoke finally clears out. I could see the look of shocked on her face. I mean, I didn't say anything right? She maybe think that I was dead, or at least passed out. Though, I'm surprised she didn't just leave me here and move on with the day.

"H-how?!" She said.

"I could sense that you were preparing a spell right outside my room. So I decided to take cover. It only make sense for me to do so." I replied.

"Even so, you must've been hit by the spell. That's a magic seeking spell." She then said, "Perhaps, you don't have any MP?"

Hmm? I do have MP right? What do you mean?

<Notice. The 'barrier' will conceal your MP and also the effect of appraisal>

Oh! That's convenient! But it seems like it doesn't erase my presence though.

"Maybe it's because you suck?" I said. It seems like I made her quite irritated. But I don't care, she's the one who decided to destroy this room and my peaceful morning right?

"Urgh... Whatever, you survive that nonetheless. I'm going to wait on the training ground." With that, she leaves my room just like that. Honestly, no responsibility?

Hey voice. Is it possible for you to turn back this room like before?

<Notice. That's possible>

Okay. Good to know. I don't want to be the one that fix this, but if no one could done it, at least I could fix it. It's more like last ditch effort type of thing. I haven't had my breakfast yet you dingus. Can you at least wait for another hour or something?

Anyway. I've finally manage to have my breakfast. Let's just ignore what expression the maid has when they arrive. To make it short, they were shocked. I asked one of them to stay with me while I eat to guide me to the training ground after it.

After I eat, I then go straight to the training ground. I'm still keeping my barrier, just in case somebody decided to make a surprise attack. Lo and behold, just right when I step my foot in the training ground, I was immediately hit by a water jet attack from 6 direction. I tried to dodge them, but in the end I still got hit by one of the water attack.

“Can't you stop it! You not only destroyed my room and not take responsibility to repair it, you also trying to kill me here!” I shout at the blue haired girl that was positioned right in the middle of the training ground.

“This is the training! What are you talking about?” The girl shout back.

“I was not expecting that, ‘this’ is the training that you've planned, Selena.” I hear from behind me. It was the Kaiser.

I see, so even the Kaiser didn't expect that she will train me like this. When Kaiser said that, it seems like the girl panicked a little bit. I then asked her, “Why did you choose to train me like this? Even if this is not really humane, you had to have an explanation as of why, right?”

She immediately answered, “Yeah. I decided to train you like this because, since the very start, you haven't bring your full potential yet right? I know that you're still holding back.”

I mean she's not wrong. But even I don't know how much potential the perseverance skill even has. As of right now, I know that I could pull out the ‘blue fire’ attack quite easily. It doesn't seem like even the ‘blue fire’ attack consume that much of my MP. To top it off, my MP is still expanding, I'm still absorbing the mana from the air remember?

I guess my only problem is just the activation. I basically have to talk to the voice, let it notice me, then I need to wait until the voice done saying things to me, after that I finally be able to activate the skill. That's a lot of procedure to be done. If I'm in a pinch, I'll be dead long time before I activate my skill. Right now, if I couldn't shorten the casting time, I basically have to predict the future and timed my skill activation in order to escape multiple scenario. That six way water attack for example, I could dodge it, but I still got hit in the end. And that's with my barrier activated long before I come in here.

“Anyway. It seems like you could also use some sort of a barrier around yourself. You have quite the skill there. It seems that all of your skill are quite useful, one way or the other.” The girl stopped her attack and approached me.

Haha... Yeah, of course all of my skill arsenal are useful. Because my skill is way too overpowered okay? I respond to her with a little laugh, as if I’m underestimating myself.

“So, what if we spar? That seems to be more appropriate right?” I asked.

“So you think that I attacking you was not a declaration to fight back?” She replied.

I don’t know what the morale here is. But yeah, I don’t think that attack was supposed to provoke me in anyway. Maybe I just see her as an enemy or something. In the end I just said, “No, I don’t think that was a declaration to a spar. But if you want to start right now, we could just start.”

Hey voice. Prepare several blue fireball for me to attack.

<Notice. Preparing several fireball spell>

She take several step back, then give me some sort of a sign with her hand. Does that mean the sparring has started? I honestly don’t know. But not long after she started dashing towards me. So... I guess it has started huh?

“Let’s see what you could’ve do!” She shouted, while running towards me.

Out of all battle that I’ve gone through. This is the first time I fight something humanoid and intelligence. Their movement is more complex, I should be careful. Anyway, she seems to be casting something.

I take a stance and unsheathe my sword. There’s suddenly a magic circle behind me. I immediately jump sideways, the magic seems to hit her head on. Does she think I will not dodge? The magic that was casted looks like some sort of an explosion spell.

Because of the explosion, I couldn’t really know what she’s doing. Maybe she’s preparing another magic?

Hey voice. Can you activate some sort a detection skill for me to know where my enemy is and also see the magic fluctuation around me, to know whether or not my enemy is casting a magic spell or not. Oh, can you also give me a favor to replace the barrier with another one if this one is broken?

I don't know if the voice know what I'm talking about. It doesn't seem to respond to my call for a couple of second. Usually, the voice will answer me immediately.

<Notice. Using skill; Detection, the user will be able to detect what is necessary right in this very moment>

<Notice. Barrier will be replaced by a new identical one every time it's broken>

Well... That's the first time that the voice needed to notice me twice on one full request. Wait, I requested two things huh? I guess it make sense as of why the voice split it to two different 'notices' then.

Anyway. That whole thing probably took 3-5 second. Even after that long, she doesn't seem to attack me. But with the detection skill, I could sense that she's indeed casting some sort of a spell. The detection skill is like when you use infrared, thermal, night vision, and motion detector camera on your eyes, there's also a continuing feedback on my head about the surrounding, it's like using sonar. Overall it's pretty cool, it also seems like I'm not overloaded with too much information, and therefore I could still clearly think.

Anyway. Because I know that she's preparing an attack, I launched a fireball at her exact location. As I was expecting, the fireball that was casted was a blue fireball. Because she's surrounded with dust from her previous attack, I manage to surprise and hit her head on.

Argh!

After that fireball hit her, I immediately heard a painful groan from inside the smoke and dust cloud. It seems like my fireball attack was too much? I thought that the blue fireball was enough to make her take me seriously. I didn't think that she will be knocked out in an instant.

"Are you okay?" I shouted.

My detection sense that she has fallen to the ground. I didn't sense any other presence except for the Kaiser in the training ground. So I decided to approach her. I cleared out the smoke and dust using wind magic from perseverance skill and see that she's literally on the ground trying to endure a burning pain.

"Did I go too far?" I mumble to myself. *"Is the sparring over?"* I ask while looking at her. Then I turn my gaze to the Kaiser and ask the same thing. Both of them doesn't seems to answer me. Maybe it isn't over?

Clang!

Not long after, I sense that someone is coming here. His movement was so fast that even I with the detection skill wasn't able to react fast enough to block the attack with my sword. It was Vargas, he came out of nowhere and just started attacking me.

"Wait! I need to fight three of you guys head on?" I asked at Vargas and Kaiser. Both of them seems to smile at me.

Why did I assume 'three' you ask? Because, immediately after Vargas attacked me, someone else seems to enter my detection skill range, and it's not one of the maid here. So to give you more information, Vargas attacked me from out of my detection range and Atro seems to approach me slowly while preparing a holy magic attack above us all. Why did I only notice this now you asked? It's because Atro only start to prepare it just now.

Anyway. Vargas attacked me and I can't react fast enough, so the barrier was activated. It doesn't seem to be broken, but now, even they know that I could use some sort of a barrier. It seems I also didn't get knocked back despite the attack was very powerful. I don't know what's wrong with Kaiser, he supported me in the start, and now he's not even saying a single thing about me getting ganged on. He's weird, but it won't change anything even if he retaliate and vouch for me.

I take a stance with my sword and said, *"U-um... Vargas-sama, please have mercy, if you go that fast, I wouldn't be able to touch you."* Then he replied, *"Well, let's see if you are a worthy opponent first shall we?"*

I don't know what's wrong with their mind, but it almost seems like they were drugged by someone. Their decision and moral are totally of from what it used to be.

I waited until they make their first move. Not long after, I sense that Selena is casting magic. I immediately move and start dashing sideway, looking for an opening. It seems that while Selena is preparing a magic attack, Vargas will be the one guarding her. And once she's done casting, Vargas will move forward and charge towards me to create an opening. All while a ginormous holy magic is being casted right above our head, the size literally cover the whole training ground.

Hey voice. Make some afterimage of myself.

<Notice. Creating several afterimages>

Once I produce the afterimages, Vargas looks way more serious than before. I'm also quite surprised that the afterimages looks more real, and not that kind of thing where it's just yourself but faded. This afterimages looks like a clone of myself but they're all moving at the same rate as me. I wonder what would happen if I casted a magic attack.

I casted a blue fireball to them. It seems like even the fireball also have an afterimage depending how much afterimages I have. Vargas sees me casting a magic attack from all direction. When the fireball reaches him, he swing his sword in a circle pattern surrounding her and he decimated all of them. Of course only one of them is the real fireball, but it doesn't cover the fact that I didn't hit him. At least it indicates that he cannot sense which one is the real fireball. Selena probably knows, but she's way too busy chanting something.

I cancel the afterimages and just wait until Selena is done with her magic attack. So far, it seems like her casting time is way longer than mine. That gives me a little boost of confidence, but there's no time for that right now. I asked to the voice, if I could know and cancel the holy magic spell that was casting above us. The voice answered that the holy magic casting above me is the disintegration spell and it could be canceled if the caster is disturbed or attacked.

I immediately make a run towards Atro. I could sense where he is from the detection skill, therefore I only need to boost my movement speed and make a run for it. I don't know if Vargas would catch up to me, but I could at least try, right? I could technically teleport, but I'm afraid that it would take too much of my MP. Right now I'm not trying to showcase too much of my capabilities. I really need to attack only using sword and/or fireballs, if I use other magic, these guys would be suspicious of me. I already showed them afterimages and they've already found out about my barrier.

I obviously could do much more, no, infinitely more than this. But I don't want them to be too suspicious of me. I decided to only use what I've been showcasing them. I use my afterimages while also boosting my movement speed.

Right now I'm inside of an alley way that connect the training ground and where Atro is currently casting his spell. Vargas seems to be chasing after me, he completely abandon Selena and start to chase me. He's probably trying to protect Atro too, right? I could juke him, make a one-eighty turn, and go for Selena instead. But if the holy spell didn't get canceled, I'd be dead.

I'm getting closer and closer to Atro. But in the end, I decided to fight Vargas in one on one sword battle. My swordplay skill is level 4. I don't think that, that's enough to fight this red haired freak, but I don't want to use magic, out of respect. So I turn to face him slash my sword. He easily blocked it. He then push me with his sword, and I ended up jumping back so I wouldn't fall.

I coat my sword with fire, he also coated his sword with fire. I tell the voice to raise my reaction speed for me to at least be on par with him. Then we started exchanging blow. Each strike that I and he delivered was blocked one way or the other. Right now we're on equal footing. Even when I'm raising my movement speed and my reaction speed, I'm still on equal footing with him. How fast is this man?!

It hasn't been long, but with every second that passed, it meant that they're also getting closer to cast their spell. I need to finish this guy now. I can't afford to waste any more time.

Hey voice. Is there any way that I could defeat this guy?

<Notice. Drown>

Well... That was fast... Anyway, I quickly incase myself and Vargas with water. He seems to be panicking, a little bit. I hold my breath and start to swim outside of the water prison. Vargas seems to be in so much panic that he passed out not long after I surround us with water.

Because I don't want Vargas to escape and chase me again. I keep the water prison and still cage him in, but I at least drain the inside so he can breathe okay? After doing that, I continue to run towards Atro.

Grumble

As I was done with Vargas, I heard a rumbling sound from where Selena is casting her spell. Not long after, I sensed that she's running towards me. I, not knowing what spell she has been casting this whole time stopped and take a stance to what is coming towards me. From the rumble earlier, I can roughly sense that it's some sort of thunder. So what's coming is probably a lightning attack or something.

One second later the whole alleyway got turned to white. I heard a loud bang, then I heard my barrier has been hit. Is this some sort of a flashbang? It does work though, I give her that. I heard that she's launching multiple attack at me and hitting my barrier. Surprisingly, this barrier has not been broken yet. How hard is this thing?

"That barrier of yours is really hard. I underestimated you" She said. I couldn't see anything, but with my 'detection' I know that the person who's speaking is indeed Selena.

"Why did you underestimate me when you are the one that said, 'I have a lot of potential'?" I replied. I'm currently facing her right now, but because there's still blinding light all over the alley way, she couldn't see me either. All this time, she's only bombard me with explosion spell towards my general location. Most of them hit me, but there's also some that misses. This 'attack' is like a two edge sword.

I honestly don't know why she's always do this kind of thing. I defeat her last time is also because she blinded herself. This girl never learn I guess. Anyway, I prepare some fireball, then launched them all towards her.

Because I could sense her location, I immediately hit her and send her flying backwards. Come to think of it, she doesn't respond to my question earlier.

"Oh well, whatever." I muttered to myself before start to chase Atro.

I realized that the range of spell that Atro was preparing was getting wider and wider. Is he trying to kill us all? If he know that I'm coming towards him and I'm also no longer in the range of his disintegration magic, he should've just back down right? Well, unless if his motives are to kill us all.

Hey voice. Could this barrier block disintegration?

<Notice. Skill; disintegration, are a skill that attack straight to the soul, there's no way to block it. An individual have to dodge the attack, or have more than one soul to survive this skill>

Well, if worse comes to worst, I could just teleport. But now, I have to slap that guy in the back of the head. He's dumb. If he keeps on like this, even the Kaiser will be in trouble. Well, except if everyone here have more than one soul, then I'll be the only one in trouble. Overall, I need to stop him ASAP.

[Huh? I sense something in the far side of the training ground screaming for help] It hit my detection skill, but it lasted for less than one second. So I decided to keep going.

This alleyway has two or three floor. I don't know the exact numbers of floor, but I know that Atro is at the floor above me. I decided to punch a hole towards to floor above me because the nearest stair is about 100 meter away from here. I ain't got time for that.

So, after running around this snake like alleyway, I've finally able to see Atro. He seems like he's busy with the spell, but I know that this was just an act. Not long after I punch a hole through the next floor, the floor where Atro is. He suddenly stopped chanting the giant integration spell, and just do nothing. Because it's super suspicious, I decided to make a clone of myself and send it instead of me. But I can still control and monitor the clone at will. Right now, my 'real me' is hiding its presence somewhere within this alleyway so no one could find my 'real me'. While 'clone me' come and

encounter Atro head on. Oh yeah, I also could switch consciousness with my 'clone me', it's not like they have any in the first place right?

What do you know, as I was just approaching him, he talks to me, "Hahaha! You think that we're that dumb to just leave me vulnerable and having such a weak defense? Don't you at least think that 'I' too can put up a fight?"

"I just don't know why you decided to cast a giant disintegration spell above us all." I replied. I ignore the fact that this whole operation 'gone as planned' type of deal and just move on.

"Maybe you are the dumb one here. The spell above was just there to lure you to me." He snickered.

"B-but, I already beat two of them? You're on your own."

He then wave his hand like signaling something. Soon after, two figure appear behind me. It's Selena and Vargas. I don't know how they already get up, but I now have to fight three of them? It seems that Selena already has her spell ready, this time it's not blinding type spell, it seems like it's just a normal fire and water ball. Vargas and Atro has their sword unsheathed and covered by some sort of an aura.

I asked the voice to make 2 more layer of barrier and make them stronger. Right now I already feel that my mana is running low. I've been using them a lot today. Though because my mana absorption skill my mana usage is not as high as before, without it I'd be ran out of mana a long time ago. If I level up this skill more, my mana usage will also be way more sufficient.

Anyway. It's time for me to fight them, 3v1. I initiate the battle, blasting them with three blue fireball each. This time they seems to be more capable, they blocked it with ease. Now I'm more scared, they're getting serious, this is not good. I'm more tired now, I can't help it though. They seems to be attacking me this time. Because this alleyway is quite narrow, I couldn't jump that high. They really think all this through are they? I decided to trust my barrier and slip my way through them.

It seems to work, my slender, tiny, 10 year old body seems to be working in my favor. It also seems like the barrier works. After I slip my way through

them, I started to run towards the middle of the training ground. Because I don't have any boost active, they caught up with me pretty fast. Listen, I decided to turn off the boost because it consumes my MP every second okay?

In the end I just let them hit me again and again while I'm finding my way through them and getting myself to the center of the training ground. It seems like this barrier is strong enough to withstand all hit from them so far. So I don't have to worry too much that it'll break.

If you are wondering why I didn't use appraisal on them all this time. I basically want to challenge myself on fighting them blindly. I want to know what it feels like fighting without appraisal. It turns out, if you use appraisal too much and become dependent on it, it's quite hard fighting them without it.

Right now I'm currently moving two body at the same time. I move my real body and my clone body to the center of the training ground. Because my real body doesn't have to deal with those three, it arrived much faster than my clone body. Therefore, I started to think of a spell to cast right in the middle of the training ground, strong enough to defeat them but weak enough to not kill them. I wanted to invest all of my remaining MP to this spell.

Hey voice. Do you have any recommendation as for what spell should I cast?

<Notice. Individual, 'Lia', already have enough proficiency in magic, thus doesn't need any recommendation>

"What do you mean by that?!" I shouted to myself.

Anyway. Thinking about it, I think if I use my holy magic I could beat them. But I don't want them to find out yet. I know showing my holy magic would make this training more worth it, and I probably will learn much more things. But seeing them 'train' me like this, it doesn't really give me the 'train' vibes. I don't want to showcase my power until I deemed their worth for being a 'trainer'.

"Hmm... I make this is quite complicated for myself" I muttered.

Guessing I have the title 'master of holy magic', I think I could use every type of holy magic now. I honestly think that 'the book' that I've read just for

2 days are way too over powered. I could know how to enhance holy magic, even as far as turning holy magic to light magic. The book also has a lot of spell about holy magic that I could try. With that, I decided to try one of the spell from the book, Holy Purge. If I execute this correctly, they might not be able to know that this is a holy magic.

You see, some holy magic spell are transparent, that's what makes this magic attribute unique from light magic. The spell that I want to cast, 'holy purge', is a spell that purges your enemy from curses and other un-holy stuff. But the book said that if someone could execute the activation of this spell correctly, this spell could also act as an overpowered targeted offensive spell. That means, the person that I targeted this spell to could not evade this spell. They might block it, but because this spell is transparent, it's really hard to know when to block.

Luckily, the book explain on how to make this spell as an offensive spell. So I began casting and 'modifying' the spell origin color to make it more powerful, the way I modify the origin color is just by imagining it inside my head while I was casting the spell. Right now I could modify 'origin color', but as I said earlier, still couldn't separate them. This spell is quite hard to set up and I also need to suppress my aura to not reveal my position to 'them'. But overall, I can't wait that this spell will do to them. If I fail and ended up buffing them, they will know out about my holy magic.

Anyway. My clone body finally able to find its way through and arrived at the center of the training ground. My main body have just finished casting the spell. When my main body finally able to see the three of them, I immediately make them the target for this spell.

The holy purge spell is a targeted spell that couldn't be dodged. Because it also have not traveling time like the fireball, it will instantly hit the target.

I targeted the three of them and now I'm just waiting for the right moment to make the move, so they will not know that I could use holy magic. Not gonna lie, seeing both of me in the same place and time is kinda weird. Especially when you are in control form both of them. I could easily switch consciousness between my real and my clone, so it becomes weirder.

Anyway. Right now my clone are sending countless normal fireball at them. Trying to catch them of guard is really hard, I try to minimize their sight with the dust cloud, but Vargas and Atro immediately use their sword to get rid of them. I'm sure Selena could also do the same. In the end I decided to make a fire prison that'll incase us all. This prison is like the flame wall that Inonami use when fighting the rabbit but a lot weaker.

It seems like they're too scared to touch the fire wall that incase them though. This is fire right? They could've just burst their way through and only left with a couple of burns. With this, they'll ran out of oxygen sooner or later. Even in this situation, I still using fireball to keep them busy. I still don't know if they're still aware of the surrounding or not.

At last, after one minute trapping them inside of the fire prison, I decided to activate the holy purge spell to them. I ask them before my main body activate the spell, "How long will we spar? My MP is running low."

They ignore me for a couple moment. Until Selena said, "Until either you or we cannot fight anymore."

I'm not sure if they could promise me that they will stop if I'm unable to fight. They could've just lie and keep beating me to death. Seeing their movement, I couldn't sense that they're actually holding back their attack. Every attack that they give me is lethal. If I didn't use my barrier, I would've been dead a long time ago.

Because I didn't see this coming to a close anytime soon, I release the holy purge spell. The spell that I've been modifying. I modify the spell to where it will cut their HP, MP, and SP exactly by 80%. I also make that this skill will get rid of any buff and debuff. I know that this seems overpowered but when I release this spell, all my MP will be depleted, thus leaving me with only my SP.

Anyway. "Modified status ailment, *Holy Purge!*"

After my main body release the spell the three 'trainer' in front of me immediately fall onto their knee. I already prepare some blue fireball right in the beginning of the battle remember? Yeah, this whole time I haven't use that fireball just in case I ran out of MP and still needed to use magic. Because

I spent all my MP for the holy purge spell, this is the perfect time to use this reserved fireball right?

So I fired it at them. The explosion is so big that the ground also explode but the fire prison is still intact. The blue fireball not only it send them flying away but because of the fire prison, they also got burned. They manage to get free from the fire prison because of that attack though. It doesn't seem pleasant whatsoever though, they seemed pass out.

The holy purge spell combined with the blue fireball work so well at them that they even passed out, I'm sure if their stats are any lower, they would literally die. In the end I point my sword at them and said, "This will end now." Then I decapitated their head.

This is the first time I ever kill another human being. Because I don't think that I could see their head being chopped off, I switch consciousness with my main body just when I swing my sword to their neck.

You might be wandering as off why I do that. It's basically because I know that those three people are actually clones or some sort. Why you asked? Remember when I sense something screaming for help? I use my main body to detect it more with detection skill when I was running to the center of training ground.

After examining it more, I realize that there's three people. In the end I came to a resolution that they're the three trainer, MY three trainer. They were Selena, Vargas, and Atro. I know this might seem crazy, but there's no way that Selena would be super aggressive to me. They defying the Kaiser order to train me according to the schedule that we've decided at night, is enough to make them suspicious.

Speaking of the Kaiser, I actually use my perseverance appraisal on him. I wouldn't reveal his stats to you but in terms of ability, he's more powerful than the Pegasus. But one thing that catch my eye was, he's under the impression of 'hypnotized'. Now it all make sense of why he didn't revolt against them and just agree to the 'new' training schedule.

In the end I also use my holy purge skill to the Kaiser but I use the ones that are not modified. I only want get rid of the hypnotized effect from him

okay, not trying to kill him here. The Kaiser also passed out immediately after I cast the spell.

I use my last SP to ditch my clone out until it can't longer be nakedly seen in the middle of the training ground. Basically, I move my clone in inside so no one will notice that it was a clone.

I'm super exhausted right now. I still have my barrier active because it doesn't seem to affect my MP unless if it was broken and needed to be reconstructed. I honestly want to pass out. That's how tired I am. But I need to keep awake and gather my MP and SP back, at least a few, to see and potentially saved what was someone that's needing my help back there.

I lean myself onto the nearest wall and start focusing on regenerating back my MP. I didn't quite explain this well but the training ground is like an open field and there's multiple path that leads to more building beside the main castle. The 'alleyway' that I was talking about was a path that leads to another training ground. From what it seems, there's multiple training ground. But there's also some path that leads to other building and not just only training ground. I don't know what the purpose of the other building though.

The one that I was invited to was an open field training ground that looked like a soccer stadium. The one that Atro was casting magic was like a maze training ground, it was a square that has open stone doors surrounding its outside. You can imagine it like the outside of the Roman Colosseum, but it's a square and inside of it is a maze. Right now I'm on the very top of the soccer stadium training ground. To be more exact, I'm on top of where the Kaiser would sit.

Anyway. After I gather some of my MP back I decided to search for 'the person'. I tried to remember it from my memory because I don't have enough MP to maintain detection skill until I could find him. If I were to do that, I would ran out of MP again.

I go back to the hallway connecting the 'soccer training ground' to the maze like training ground. If I remember, there's an energy coming out from a wall in a specific area. If you weren't looking for it you wouldn't find it but last time I check is somewhat in the middle between these two training

ground. After a couple of moment of searching I finally found it. Yeah, so it turns out that the magical energy coming out from this wall is low, to where you can't detect it at all if you were just passing by. I manage to find it immediately if I were to use detection skill.

This wall does emit magical energy, but I don't know whether or not this is a dead end or a secret door. I could just punch through this wall though. I maybe couldn't do it with raw strength but if I were to use strengthening magic, I might be able to break it. Though, by doing that I will use my MP and also SP. I don't really care about MP that much, but if my SP were to ran out, I would pass out.

Hey voice. Is there a way I could see through these walls?

<Notice. Activating skill; Clairvoyance, the user can see through walls>

Oh! That's nice! I now could see that there's in fact a room behind this wall. From what it looks like, there's a secret hallway inside here. When I see further, I could see that there's in fact three person being tied up, and yeah, it's Selena, Vargas, and Atro. Without much waiting I immediately punch through it. At least like this I wouldn't just waste my SP right?

I ran through the hallway and trying to not make noise. When I finally stop right before the three trainer I heard a footstep getting closer to here. Whoever manage to tied them up must at least be someone that's stronger than the three of them combined. With my current situation, I wouldn't be able to lay a finger on what's coming here. I take a look around to find a place where I could hide. My body is small so I could practically fit anywhere here. Oh yeah, the place where my trainer was being tied up looked like a torture room. I don't know why they have this room in the first place but at least there's a lot of 'equipment' here that I can hide behind.

A couple moment passed and the person that's coming here finally arrived. I must say that this is not a person, it's like a Minotaur. Right now I'm hiding behind what it looks like a guillotine.

“The wall was broken through, there might be someone here huh? Not only that, three of my troop are all dead and my control over the Kaiser. Whoever ruined all this must've been someone from outside.”

I mean... That thing's not wrong. I'm indeed from outside. The Minotaur voice was deep like you would've imagine what a Minotaur would sound.

“Unless... If the ‘someone’ that ruin my plan was right here all along!”

At that point I make an accidental eye contact with the Minotaur. He literally starring at my soul. Because of the immense pressure I noped out of there using teleport, straight to my room babyyy!

CH. TEACHER 3

ENCOUNTER WITH THE LOLI

1

Wait wait wait... There's suddenly a phone in front of me and there's actually someone on the other side? My body is giving up on me, I cannot answer the call. My voice also starting to give up, my consciousness is going in and out. I could still faintly hear the person behind the smartphone calling someone. In the end I give up and just let my consciousness take me away.

...

When I woke up I'm already in the forest where the big tree was. I got myself up and started to look around. It seems like the behemoth is no longer in here. I now know how to use skill at least. In fact, I now only need to use my mind in order to activate a skill. I don't know how. It's just when I get out from the 'tutorial level', I could suddenly do that.

How'd I know you asked? Obviously I tried it immediately you dingus.

Because now I could fully use all of my skill, I use the appraisal skill on myself. I already appraise myself once, inside of the 'tutorial level'. But just in case there's an improvement, I did it again.

Said **, Human Lv.1**

Age : 24 years

Stats :

HP: 230 / 230

SPD: 63

ATK: 145 **DEF: 20**
MP: 205 / 205 **SP: 210 / 210**
Avg. 198
Skill :
Appraisal Lv.3 **Student Overseer Lv.1**
Survivalist Lv.3 **Great Sage**

It seems to work just fine! Finally! I could use my skill! I don't know, but I think my stats didn't rise in the slightest. That's a bummer. I literally kill tens of thousands of skeleton yet my level didn't went up a single digit?!

This is a scam. I did all of those thing, trying not to die, and my only reward is just to be able to use my skill?!

"There's way more benefit to be honest. Though a person like you will only found it out in the long run."

"!"

I immediately looked where the sound is coming from. It's high up where one of the tree branches out. Because it's high up I cannot really make out who's this 'bastard' that looks down on me.

"You really are that powerful, why not show yourself and face me head on huh?!" I shout back mockingly.

"At least you should be thankful that you're not dead when you got teleported here. That Anisopteragon is still waiting for you, you know."

What?! The behemoth is still here?! I immediately take on a closer look on my surrounding. After searching for it, I stumble back. The behemoth was actually still here but there's one thing that's different, it doesn't emit any energy. The thought then struck me.

"A-are you perhaps the one who kill this monster..?"

"I don't know. But at least you are now safe. Next time you shall not intervene with my mission peasant!"

What you say?! This person that obviously sounds like a little girl is calling me peasant! I really wanted to show whose boss here. But if she's the

one who killed the behemoth, I stand no chance, NO CHANCE, against her. I should calm myself down.

“I-if you are the one that kill this m-monster, t-thank you.” I said hesitantly. I mean, who would even say thank you to somebody that treats you like this?

The girl jumped down from the tree. Now, seeing it from up close, she’s what you called a loli in anime. She’s a petite girl with a quite pale skin. You know what, judging because I was the protagonist in this world. I could probably make her the heroin! (I swear I’m not a lolicon, the writer might be though)

“What? You want to stop me? I don’t have time to babysit you. I need to hurry and get out from this forest before they’re done with the training.”

I don’t know what she means by ‘they’, but if she want to get out of this forest, I might as well tag along.

“I-if you don’t mind, I also want to tag along with you to get out from this forest.”

“You? Tag along with me? Are you dreaming? No way.”

This girl really doesn’t know how to respect the elderly. If I were any other teacher, there would be a battle between them right now.

“I was suddenly teleported here. I don’t know how, but I think I’ve been teleported into another world.”

When I said that, the girl eyes widened. Wait, does she knows about teleported person perhaps?

“You were teleported here?” She asked.

“Yeah... And I honestly, I don’t know how...” I replied.

“Hmm... That’s weird, there’s should’ve only been two people that were teleported inside of this forest. Did my master miscalculate things?”

She seemed to be confused. I don’t know what’s she mumbling about, but she does say that there’s should’ve been only two people that were being

teleported in to this forest. If she said that, that means she already found the 'only two' that were supposedly teleported here. That means I was the third.

If my gut instinct were correct, that means the two people she encounter must be my student?!

"Wait. Can you tell me where are they right now? If you left them out, I might have to save them." Even though I was in so much trouble, if there's a person that I know, that's younger than me, and they could've been dead by now judging by how much monster are there in this forest. I obviously wouldn't just stand still, especially when I'm their teacher and could put up a fight, I will protect those who I know. I wouldn't just sacrifice myself to them, but at least I could put up an act to save them, even if I fail in the end, at least I tried.

"Because I don't know you, but I'm only gonna say that they're safe. You should take care of yourself first."

The girl 'annoying tone' seemed to die out. Her tone is a little bit more gentle now.

"I still cannot let you tag along with me. I could give you a general direction of where the way out from the forest is though."

At that point I became suspicious. This girl, this girl knows about the 'other two people' that were also teleported here. She then said that 'they're' okay. That means that she at least make them to where they will not face danger anymore. If that were the case, then 'they' already gotten out from the forest. But she just said that I couldn't tag along with her, now there's two possibility. One, she just doesn't like me. Two, she doesn't want any 'secret' to be revealed about her.

"Can I at least know where the other people went?"

She pause for a little bit then said, "I've lead them towards a path where there's no monster. The path I'm currently taking is much more dangerous but shorter. The path 'they're' taking are much longer, but there will be no monster."

I immediately replied, "Can you show me the way that they're heading?"

Yeah, she said that there will be no monster. But food and water is another thing. I know they're a high school student, but I still have my worries okay?

Anyway. She then give me the direction. Overall, the direction does seem to be super long. She estimated the 'they' will be arriving to the nearest city in a month, and they started their journey three days ago.

"... So what you're saying. If I want to catch up, I basically need to run all day long?"

"You could probably catch up to them in general because your pace are different from them. But once you catch up, they will probably outside of the forest."

We had a little bit more conversation about my current status and 'their' status. But right after that, I immediately pack my stuff and head towards 'their' general path. Luckily she give me a shortcut to where I could catch up to them.

"You might wanna always turn on your appraisal skill. There's a lot of monster while you go there, Said."

"!" You know. She haven't introduce herself to me. When I turn my head and try to appraise her, she already jump upward towards the tree branch. Because she's not in my line of sight, I cannot appraise her anymore. I guess that's how much my level 3 appraisal could manage huh?

Thinking about it, I haven't introduce myself either. That means she also have the appraisal skill? If that's the case, then that also means that her appraisal skill are at least level 3 too.

There's no time for that right now. Now's the time for me to catch up with 'them'. I swear, if the girl lied to me, I'll beat her up in some way.

INTERLUDE 2

CONFUSED FLAME GIRL

1

Could my master be mistaken? How could there be three person teleported here? My master does say that there will be only two. Did I pick a wrong person? There's no way, I already use my appraisal skill on Lia and Nate. I also use my appraisal skill on that person, Said.

He seems to be teleported from the 'tutorial level' judging by the sudden mana inconsistency. His stats is not too bad and he does have the rare appraisal skill. Though it's not as rare as the perseverance and Envy skill, it is still a quite rare skill.

Anyway. I sent two shadow clones to observe him and keep an eye out. I obviously lie about the 'two other people'. He'll still reach the end of the forest, but he will not meet the 'two other people'. Because they're inside of my 'domain', training.

My 'domain' is WAY more efficient for training rather than the tutorial level. So when I take them out from my domain, not only they will be outside of this forest, their stats also would increase exponentially.

I still don't know why there's three people who got teleported to this forest though. Maybe it's the interference from the system itself?

You know what, I could've just ask master myself when I get out from this forest. It's not like I endangered any 'Ihito' right? I also makes sure that the old man will be okay. That's why I use my shadow clone.

Anyway. I really need to get out from this forest. After killing the Anisopteragon, the mother will come sooner or later. She's one of the guardian of the forest, so if I were to kill her the balance between the forest guardians will be broken.

I quicken my step and head straight towards the 'Strom Gate'.

CHAPTER 8

THE LAST EVERLASTING MINOTAUR

1

The Minotaur eyes were literally locked with me. That means I was found out. He will definitely target me next. You may ask, “WhY dOn’t YoU uSe SoMe SoRt oF aN iNViSiBiLiTY SpELI?!” Why? Because I was panicking okay. Now shut up.

Anyway. When I teleported to my room, I immediately grab ‘the appraisal orb’ and started thinking. You may ask “what’s with the orb?” Well you see... The orb makes me don’t have to eat. When I examine it the other day, I discovered that this orb replenish your SP in such a way that you don’t have to eat anymore. Therefore when I hold this, my SP will regenerates back even if I’m not sleeping.

Who has the time to sleep when a freaking monster is trying to kill you anyway? In fact, you would be wide awake as if you just drank 10 coffee and smoke 3 cigarette. I’m not saying from experience here okay, I’m still below 18, and I don’t smoke.

After grabbing the orb I ran outside of my room, make myself invisible, and go straight to the maid’s dorm. I studied the castle through the book that the Kaiser lend me. Why the maid’s dorm you asked? Because the maid here seems to have extraordinary power. I could use that and build a team to counter the Minotaur. The Minotaur also would probably not bother too much with the maid, therefore not hypnotizing them. But when he knows that

there's some body that knows his plan, he might take an extra precaution and hypnotize all the maids.

Well... My initial plan was to go and save the Kaiser. But that means I'm bringing myself closer to the Minotaur. So in the end, I decided to go to the maid dorm. I don't know how to persuade them to team up with me. But that's a problem for later. If he manage to hypnotize all the maid, the matter will be a thousand times more difficult.

Right now I only had to go there without anyone noticing. I must not trust anyone right now. Even if the Minotaur haven't done anything... Well, it's not like I know that the Minotaur has done something in the first place right?

Anyway. I'm already in front of the maid's dorm. If you guys are wondering how I know where the dorm is, I basically use clairvoyance to see where it is. Well, I also use detection skill, but it seems using clairvoyance is enough to find where it is.

There are approximately 10 maids inside here right now. I cast a barrier magic in front of the dorm in order to make sure no one walks in and out. I just want to get the maid trust and fight the Minotaur. I didn't use my appraisal skill on the Minotaur because I was panicking way too much. But overall, I could sense that the Minotaur is stronger.

Well, I basically fight 3 versus 1 and still win and if I really want to, I could probably win against that beast.

I peek into the maid dorm and immediately tell the voice to search if they're under some sort of a mind control. And wouldn't you know it, I was partially correct. Some of them are already in the effect of the Minotaur mind control.

Guessing that I've been found by the Minotaur, if I were to show my face against the maid under the mind control, they will be sending some sort of signal to the Minotaur. And if I were to free them from the mind control, the Minotaur would know that one of his pawn are freed. Therefore he/she could track me down to here.

The only way I can communicate with the non-mind controlled maid was through telepathy.

So I do exactly that and said somewhere along the line of, “Y’all hearing this means y’all not get mind controlled YET, I’m Lia and if you encounter a Minotaur, you should run. I need your help...” And then I explains about the whole ‘let’s work together’ plan.

In the end I manage to invite about 5 maids to my room. We discussed about the plan to expose the Minotaur. So, we agree to deceive the other maids thinking I was out and about playing in the castle or even reading some books in the library. I mean, technically this body was still 10 years old right? So ‘me’ playing around in the castle does make sense.

When next day arrive and I’m not dead, I will be finding the Kaiser. I don’t know if the Kaiser is still in the spectator seat in the training ground, or the Minotaur had already found the Kaiser and disposes him.

I hope it’s not the second one though. I mean, it will not affect me too much, but the maids here will have a mental breakdown (probably). You see, all the maids here looked like the Kaiser concubine. They’re all so close to him, it’s almost suffocating.

Anyway. Because my room is no longer safe, I planned to sleep in other rooms. Those five maids actually gave me a master key to all the guest room in this ‘castle’. Therefore, I could sleep wherever I wanted to.

After searching through the castle, I found three rooms that suited me well. Not because they’re huge and luxurious, but because of their position. These three rooms are on the back of the castle. These three rooms are quite spaced apart so if one of the room was found, I could just move to the other.

Soon, the sun started to set. After I fight with ‘those three’, my SP right now are still regenerating. Its super exhausting you know. My SP right now are halfway full.

Oh yeah, when I killed ‘those three’, my swordplay leveled up to level 7 and my mana absorb also leveled up to level 6. Right now, my stats are like this:

Lia *, Human Lv.2**

Age : 10 years

Stats :

HP: 221/221 SPD: 101

ATK: 188 DEF: 26

MP: 177/202 SP: 87/ 209

Avg. 205

Skill:

Title:

Perseverance

Swordplay Lv.7

Ruler of Perseverance

Pure Determination

Mana Absorb Lv.6

Master of Holy Magic

Unyielding

Disintegration

Yeah, I could say that my stats are sitting nicely in the two hundred marks. Seeing this, I feel like I'm invincible. But in reality, my stats doesn't even compare to what an adult stats could looked like.

Anyway, I decided to surround this room with a barrier and also surround myself with 5 barrier this time. You could never be too safe right? Good night!

...

I woke up before the sun start to rise as a typical high school student and start to plotting by myself. I'm planning to set up a trap and lure that Minotaur into it. Thinking about it, I could test out my 'Disintegration' on that thing right?

After I came out with that idea, I come out from my room and immediately make myself invisible. I take a route to the maid's dorm before going to the place I wanted to set my trap. I want to make sure if that Minotaur has made any progress on mind controlling these maids. And sure enough, more maids are getting mind controlled. After knowing that, I continue my walk.

There's three places that I wanted to cast my trap. The first one is the dining hall and I will set some sort of a barrier that'll cage the Minotaur in. I also set up a personal teleportation gate if I need to teleport myself in here but don't have any mana. The second one is the lair where he/she keeps my three trainer and I will set a teleportation array and teleport him into the middle of the training ground. Finally, the third one is the training ground itself, I'll set a massive disintegration spell like what 'Atro' did.

My initial plan was just to lure the Minotaur to the training ground and use the disintegration skill but then I think, I don't really know where the Minotaur is. So I decided to put a trap at a place where the Minotaur will come across but I don't really know if the Minotaur ever go inside of the castle before though. If he did come inside of the castle once in a while, I put a trap in the dining hall.

'Why the dining hall' you asked? Well, the dining hall is where most the maids are stationed even if they have nothing to do. But just in case the Minotaur only go in and out of the 'lair', I want to put a teleportation array there. The training ground trap were pretty obvious so I'm not gonna talk about it.

Anyway, I'm inside of the dining hall right now and immediately I start setting up the trap. I learned to make traps when Inonami thought me back when we're on the forest, through the book that the Kaiser lend me, and also through the world voice. They were pretty explanatory and easy to digest. We basically have to pour our mana to our hand or finger and use them to write the spell that we want to cast. So, the hard part was just to memorize how to write the spell. But guess what, I could just ask the world voice to create a clone where they could then write it on their own under the voice control. I discovered that the voice could take control of my body just this morning when I scheming in my room.

I create a clone then let the voice write down the array for me. While my clone's doing that, I create a portal in the dining hall where only I can use it. So this dining hall are served as a cage to lock the Minotaur and/or a safe place for me to defend myself if I were to be in a pinch.

I leave my clone in the dining hall once I'm done preparing the portal because it will be long until the array was done. The reason it will take a long time is because I tell the voice that we'll need 10 or more barrier just in case the Minotaur is super strong. Oh yeah, the good thing about creating an array is that I don't have to spend too much of my MP to create it, I just have to maintain mana circulation in my fingertip. Not to mention that everyone in this world could also do the same. But the trade was that it needs a lot of time to set up.

I have finished the portal and right now are heading to the training ground. Speaking of which, the 'lair' was the farthest place that I had to set my trap in. I head towards the training ground and first I want to find out if the Kaiser is still there. If he is, I want to teleport him to my original room. I don't want to teleport him to my actual room because even if he is not under control, I want to deceive the Minotaur thinking that I've secured him. I also plan to plant some sort of a trap if the Minotaur wants to approach him again. Obviously I'll make sure to not hurt the Kaiser, but he doesn't really have any connection with me so I don't care too much about it.

Anyway. It seems that the Kaiser is still here. I appraise him using the orb:

Kaiser, King of All Everlasting Slime Lv.30

Status : Poisoned, Fainted

Stats :

HP: 2196 / 3700 SPD: 250

ATK: 350 DEF: 200

MP: 712 / 750 SP: 91 / 1500

Rank : 4 Star

Description :

The King of all everlasting slime in this dimension, Kaiser. Kaiser is the guardian guarding the mother tree, the first line of defense in the everlasting embrace. He is the weakest guardian guarding the everlasting embrace. Despite that, he's still a guardian, so you should not underestimate how much power this slime has. The everlasting slime are known for their durability, therefore the Kaiser are very durable, but not as durable as the 4th strongest guardian of the everlasting embrace, Dark Seraph.

Why I use the orb you asked? Well, because the voice is doing 'chores' right now, I can't contact the world voice.

Anyway. It seems like he got poisoned by something. Probably because of food that one of the maid serve. Maybe he got a poisonous food from a maid that's already been mind controlled by the Minotaur? I said that because the only thing that's been reduce greatly was his SP and because of the poison his HP also goes down, but not as much as his SP. His MP is also not full, he probably try to use magic to get rid of the poison but failed.

Honestly, I'm kinda surprised about his stats. I know that he's stronger than me, but not this much stronger than mine. In fact, every single one of his stats are still above me by a significant margin. And the appraisal said that he's technically the weakest one?! If he's the weakest one, how much do I need to improve in order to defeat the other guardian?

After using appraisal on him, I started to write a massive disintegration spell in the middle of the training ground. It's basically the same as what the voice is doing in the dining hall and because I have the disintegration skill, I don't have to memorize the array, I could just cast a mini disintegration spell and see patterns on the magic circle that's casted. Unlike what 'Atro' did when we spar, he casted a giant magic circle in the sky, while what I'm doing right now is setting up an array.

Difference is that a magic circle cannot contain a magic spell therefore the use is to cast a spell. While an array can contain a magic spell therefore not only I could cast the spell within it whenever I wanted to. I also could make easy adjustment to it like; automatic activation upon standing on top of it, to target a specific person, the power output, etc. But of course, if you want to do that, you will need to write more and therefore memorize more rune. Because right now I want to make a modification where this array will only activate if the Minotaur were to stand on top of it, I need to make an extra rune on top of the disintegration skill. Luckily, I've already memorize it!

After I'm done with this I could then go to the lair. I just hope that the Minotaur doesn't find me here. Oh yeah, I forgot to tell you that the 'trainer' corpses that I killed yesterday were gone. So I'm kinda suspicious as of why the Minotaur doesn't bring the Kaiser with him.

Okay, I'm done setting this array up. It also seems that the voice is also done setting the array in the dining hall. My clone has disappear under the voice order and the voice is back inside me now. So does that mean my perseverance skill is the voice? When I think about its description, it says that the perseverance skill makes me easier to obtain a new skill and I also could sacrifice my MP, SP, and HP to temporarily use a skill that I don't have. That's why I could learn the disintegration skill quite fast. Then there's the 'Sacrifice my MP, SP, and HP to temporarily use a skill that I don't have' thing, does that mean the voice is actually another skill and not the

perseverance skill itself? But that doesn't make sense because I couldn't 'borrow' any skill if the world voice is not present like the time when I couldn't 'borrow' any skill when I and the voice was doing something else. You know what, I'm not going to think about it, this is making me feel light headed.

Anyway. Because the voice is back, I come back to the Kaiser and teleported him to 'my room'. When I do that, the teleportation took like 80% of my remaining MP away. Teleportation is high level magic, so the fact I could do that is probably already insane. But I've done it once when I make eye contact with the Minotaur, so there's no surprise.

Once I'm done teleporting the Kaiser away, I meditate for a bit to replenish my MP. Thank god my mana absorption skill is already level 6 so my MP is quickly replenish. Although, it seems like the huge concentration of mana in the area also affect my MP regeneration ability. So with that combined I already replenish my MP back to full in just half an hour.

I then make my way to the lair after incasing myself with 3 barrier and making myself invisible. I tried to make as little mana print when making my way to the lair. I use some sort of a mana concealment spell using perseverance when making my way to the lair in order to conceal my mana.

Once I arrive in front of the lair, I use 'detection' to see if the Minotaur are inside of the lair or not. Oh yeah, the door to the lair is already sealed up again. Because I punched the door until it break and now the door are sealed, that means the Minotaur could either use some sort of earth magic or could reverse something whether that uses time or some sort of an overhaul magic.

This time, I decided to just phase through the wall rather than breaking it. Because my MP is basically maxed out, I could bring my fullest potential in this battle.

I walked in the lair until I arrived at the end of the tunnel and once again greeted by my three trainer. Their condition seemed to be worse than before. The Minotaur must've tortured them every day for this to be the case.

After feeling a little bit of sympathy I started to write a teleportation array. Teleportation array is one of the more complicated array there is. Because you need to set a coordinate to where the target will get teleported.

From how the voice explained to me about teleportation array is that I need to write some sort of a coordinate system within the array using some sort of a symbol that supposedly mean something?

Because I don't know how the coordinate system work, I leave it to the voice to take over. This time I didn't split my body this time. Because of that, I could feel what it feels like to be controlled by someone else.

Despite of that, I could still think. Therefore, I plan to teleport the three trainer that was tortured here to my room. But, seeing from what teleporting one person will do to my MP, I think I will not be able to teleport all three of them at the same time. At most, I probably could only teleport two people at the same time. Even that will deplete all of my MP. With that, I could do nothing to make sure they're safe. I'm not obligated to safe them in the first place, so if I can't I will not. They're not someone that's important in my book anyways.

My upcoming battle with the Minotaur is coming. After I'm done with this teleportation array, I'll go back to the training ground.

When I'm in the middle of creating this array, I heard a door sound far away. Not long after that I sense something's coming here with my detection skill. Wouldn't you know it, it's the freaking Minotaur.

Knowing that, I tell the voice to hurry up and finish the array quickly. Why? Even if I'm invisible right now, the array that I'm writing could easily been seen, and that's me saying if we're out side and there's a lot of distraction. The thing is, while I'm writing this array, the letter glows, and it will stop glowing and turn invisible when I'm done writing the array. Because I'm in the middle of writing this array, the Minotaur could easily see that there's someone in the room building a trap. With the room being super dim, the symbol/letter I'm writing is equivalent as a flashlight in the middle of the night.

The time it takes for me to walk from the entrance to the main lair is about one and a half minute. And there's approximately three minutes left before I'm done writing this array. I tried to think of a solution to avoid being caught, but I'm basically immobile right now. Once you start making an

array, you must not stop until you're finished. Because if you stop mid track, the array you've been making would've dissipate.

I might try to split my body into two, but what exactly could I do without the voice. I could use my raw strength, but I think that the Minotaur will be a lot stronger than me. I mean, that's why I'm setting traps everywhere right?

Hey voice. Can you make a body create a body and buff it with everything I need to fight the Minotaur and to lead him to the training ground?

<Notice. Creating a modified body with extra stats, barrier 5x, detection, strength, speed, fire magic, and appraisal>

That's what I'm talking about! Now I could fight him without too much worries.

My stats and skills are the same, so I could still use sworsplay, mana absorb, and the title 'Master of holy magic' to use up against him. And with this buffed up body, I might even survive until I come to the training ground. But I still let the voice to make the array.

After I'm done transferring my consciousness to the new body, I ran towards the door. And immediately activate barrier, detection, strength, speed, and appraisal.

Just a couple of second my appraisal finally recognize that there's something in front of me and stats start to showed up in front of me,

Capra, Minotaur Lv.19

Age : 45 years

Stats :

HP: 544/544 SPD: 115

ATK: 208 DEF: 35

MP: 198/198 SP: 267/ 279

Avg. 307

Skill:

Title:

Durability Lv.8 Mind Control Lv.5 Paralyzing Lv.1

Greed Holder (11%)

Fulgurite Magic Lv.2Greed Lv.1 Deception Lv.6

Terra Magic Lv.3 Ruler Lv.3 Taboo Lv.3

That's the result. That's a lot of skill though. Seeing that, I don't know if I could beat him though. I'll probably be dead long before I could touch him. But whether I could win or not, I still ran towards the Minotaur.

Not long after, we met face to face. At that exact moment he pull a hammer from his back and immediately swing it towards me.

Boom!

My body was sent flying into the entrance and hit a wall, making a huge dent on it. Good thing I had barrier with me, without it my bone would probably be crushed.

“What have you done huh? Have you prepare something to defeat me?” He said mockingly, “As far as I know, there's no way you could beat me!”

I need to lure him to the training ground!

I started to run towards the training ground but suddenly a wall start to emerge from the exit and trapping me here in the hallway. I looked back and see that the Minotaur is charging towards me using his arm as his leg.

Boom

He hit me with his antlers. I got hit so hard to the wall that the thick stone wall crumble to pieces sending me through the wall. Once again, I'm grateful for the barrier skill.

“Hmph! It seems like your body is sturdier than what I imagine from a little girl!”

After the hit I quickly stand up, unsheathe my sword, gain my composure, and I said calmly, “And you seems to have a grudge against me.”

Minotaur went silent for a moment, then he said with a somewhat an angry tone, “You... You have killed my people and you're still questioning that?”

“What is your motive? I think you're the one that started this whole thing first right? Why did you capture those three people as well as brainwashing the Kaiser?” I replied. My detection ability also detect that he's currently preparing a spell to launch at me.

“I supposed that you’re new here. You probably don’t know the full story then. Do you want me to explain it to you?”

Knowing he has a skill called ‘Lying’, I denied the offer. Before he could charge at me again, I turn my gaze and once again run towards the training ground.

When he see that I started to run again, he said, “Why did you decided to run? Before, you could just teleport your ways out of my sight. Why did you decide to run now? Perhaps, are luring me somewhere?”

I ignore the fact that he basically know my plan and just keep running. He could easily caught up to me if he uses the charge attack again. That’s why I need to create as much distance between us if possible.

I started to create a fireball in my hand and firing it blindly to the opposite direction from where I was running. This fireball is just a normal fireball and it’s not a blue one because it seems like I need the voice to create those blue fireball. I hope that by firing this fireballs I could create a smoke screen and limit the Minotaur field of vision.

The spell that the Minotaur seem to cast from the point we start talking seems to be finished. A thunder sound could be heard from behind me. Not long after I sense a lightning strike is making its way towards me at an insane speed. I throw a fireball at the lightning.

Boom

The two attack create an explosion. Even with my barrier, I could still feel the heat from the explosion. More than that, I was knocked back by the explosion. But it’s rather convenient because it pushes me closer to the training ground.

You see, luring the Minotaur to the training ground is not just because I’ve set a trap there, but because I rather fight him in an open area than in a shallow hallway. I could easily dodge and take a high ground if we were to fight in an open field like the training ground.

Just when I nearing the end of the tunnel, the entrance quickly closed in. It seems that the Minotaur used earth magic to block it. I try to use my fireball, but the wall quickly regenerate.

I clicked my lips and turn my gaze over to the Minotaur. How long has it been again? Probably not even one minutes.

I then remember something. Because I have the 'Master of holy magic' title, I could also use holy magic and not just limited to fireball. There's one problem, holy magic needs a lot of time to prepare. If I were to use holy magic right now, I'm basically has become a sitting target. And forget about my swordplay skill. My strength even with the buff, are totally out matched. Not to mention he has the Durability skill and his height is twice as mine.

That means I could only do one thing in order to put up a fight. I need to use my disintegration skill!

Because there's still quite a thick smokescreen, I immediately start setting up my disintegration skill. The reason I tried to use my array that I just built because I want to minimize my MP usage. I also don't have the confident that my disintegration skill will work.

But here goes nothing I guess!

Once the smoke clears out a bit the look of shock filled the Minotaur face. He then shout, "Y-you could use the disintegration skill?!"

From what he said, it seems like the Minotaur is in a panic. He immediately launch several lightning bolt at me without any hesitation. Honestly, who would hurt a tiny little girl like me?

Anyway. Because of my barrier, none of his thunder attack seems to work on me. Seeing that thunder is no use against me, he make several walls of dirt in front of me. He also manipulated the wall in this hallway in order to squeeze me. Because of my barrier (again), the wall couldn't really squeeze me. But right now I'm completely buried by the walls.

He probably thought that losing my line of sight will protect him from the disintegration skill. But jokes on him, with this I have more time to prepare my skill. And because I have the 'Master of holy magic' title, I could also modify my disintegration skill.

First of all, I'm going to modify this skill to where I don't need direct line of sight in order for this skill to hit. It's the same mechanics as the holy purge skill I use back then. Next, I will make sure that the disintegration skill

will hit my target. Then I will finally make sure that this skill will work separating the Minotaur soul and body and defeating him out.

By the way, the voice should be done creating the array any second now. If the Minotaur decided to head to the lair, without really doing anything, my plan basically succeeded.

<Notice. Main body has finished setting up the array. Transferring data, changing main body>

Oh!! So the voice could change the main body? Nice!

It's also nice to know that the array has been set. Now, I don't really need to cast this disintegration spell anymore... Well, I guess just for extra measure, why not keep casting it right?

<Notice. Transferring to new main body. Completed>

After the voice notice me, I immediately give it another order. Well, I hope the voice doesn't know fatigue, because if I were the one that got ordered around like this, I'll be exhausted and mad at my 'master'.

Anyway. *Hey voice. Expand to detection skill until it reach the lair.*

<Notice. Expanding the area of detection skill. Consuming more MP in order to maintain the detection area>

That should be fine I guess, my MP in this body is quite full, so I think I could maintain this for about 10 minutes. Anyway, I could sense the Minotaur now by expanding my detection skill. He seems to be heading to the lair.

Hey voice. You make sure that the array will prioritize to target the Minotaur right?

<Notice. Correct>

Okay... Nice. The reason I ask that because I want to make sure to not kill the three trainer that's stuck down there. I continue casting the spell. This time, I got the voice with me, so my casting process will be shortened.

I sense the Minotaur has indeed entered the lair. I hope he tripped the trap.

Not long after, I'm done casting the modified disintegration spell and asked the voice to store this skill in order for me to use it at emergency time later.

Once the voice stored the spell, I activate my speed buff and tell the voice to permeate myself through the wall. At the same time, the Minotaur actually tripped the spell and now was teleported to the massive disintegration array that I make earlier. I guess that array will not gone to waste after all.

I boost my way through the ground and head straight through the training ground. You know, I'm glad I could activate the detection spell, because travelling inside of the ground is like running in a pitch black room, there's no light at all (duh).

While getting closer and closer, I could faintly hear the sound from the array activating. I could also sense the ground is shaking. Getting closer, I could hear the Minotaur is screaming in pain. Not long after all the noise and the shaking stopped.

I emerge from the ground to one of the spectator seat. If I were to emerge in front of him, he would immediately attack me and I don't want that. I saw that he's indeed suffering, but not dead yet.

I slowly approach him from behind then said, "What happ- No. What's your motives to overthrow this place?"

He then replied weakly, "The pervious king, King Khan, massacre my entire village and now I'm the only one in this area that's a Minotaur. I want to take revenge, that's all."

"That's the previous king though..." I replied

"See. You wouldn't understand... Well, the reason Kaiser was the new king is because his deed were found out by the God of this realm. And she's the one that take his crown away switching it with the Kaiser."

"And you still have grudge against this place after knowing that?"

He takes a moment before answering my question. While he's thinking, I was also thinking. The 'God' that he refer to is probably Inonami, he even say it's a 'she'. I also realize why there was no 'Minotaur' race when I use

the orb. If you remember, in this area, the Zeruah Grove has multiple races inside of it. The ever slime, ever demon, ever healer, ever dancer, ever goblin, and Pegasus. But none of the races were 'Minotaur'. I also use the orb to see what kind of species live in the Mother Tree but it came up with nothing.

So the king Khan really massacre an entire race out of existence huh? I could somewhat feel what the Minotaur has been feeling. By the way, the Minotaur seems to hold up quite well against the disintegration array but he's currently lying down in his side, it seems like he couldn't stand up. The disintegration spell doesn't seem to kill him off just like that. I guess I have to improve my array making skill huh?

Anyway, the Minotaur continue talking, "I indeed still hold a grudge to this place. I think you know why after I explain all of that right?"

I then replied, "Then what could you do to forgive this place?"

"Nothing... There's nothing you could do for me to forgive this place. Even if I did manage to accomplish what I desire for these few hundreds of year, I think I would just be left with an empty heart." He paused, hesitated for a bit, and then continue, "I guess the only way for me to forgive this place was to leave this world at once."

"So you're saying you want to die? Why not you just kill yourself? Why did you put up a fight against the disintegration spell? You could just give up to fate." I replied.

"Huh? You're telling me that after I've come this far into destroying the palace I would just give up like that? Even if I did say that the only thing for me to forgive and forgot this world is to be killed, I want to rest in peace knowing that the palace was destroyed."

"Well, what do you want to do now? Do you still want to fight? Or do you want to just give up? I don't know if I could kill you, but if you give up now I would give you the most painless death I could imagine."

He turned his body and now he's facing up towards the sky. He then tell me, "I certainly doesn't want to give up yet. But it seems my body was too old and I couldn't even move my feet in order to stand up."

He continue his line, “Do whatever you want, I will keep in mind that I already do my best. If you want to kill me, so be it. I actually have a request if you want to really kill me. Make it as painful as possible, at least with that, I could know what my village went through when it got massacred.”

What is this Minotaur saying? One moment he’s a bad guy. Now he speaks like a wise old man on his death bed saying his will to his grandchild. I honestly doesn’t feel bad killing him. Rather, I was confused as of why I didn’t feel a thing when I killed those ‘three trainer’ before. And now I doesn’t feel a single guilt wanting to kill this Minotaur.

Because I was reminded of the ‘three trainer’, I asked him about it. He then replied, “They’re assassins I rent once I knew that there’s a new guest in this palace and it’s supporting the Kaiser. They’re called doppelganger, they could imitate other people appearance and ability.”

“So their purpose was to kill me? You didn’t even hesitate to hire three assassin to kill a little kid. How do you even manage to find an information about me being a new guest here?”

The Minotaur seems to hesitate to talk to me about this kinda stuff. While he’s hesitating I manage to tie down the Minotaur using binding magic that I ask the voice to make. After I bind him, it looks like he’s holding back a laugh.

Not long after he started answering my question, “First, you don’t have to tie me down like this. Like what I said, I couldn’t move a leg and an arm, just rest assure. Next, I’m indeed such a heartless being by hiring assassins just to kill off a little kid, I’m sorry about that. And finally, I got the information about you being a new guest was from a maid I had mind controlled.”

“You don’t have to be sorry about killing me, in the end they failed their assassination. It’s probably because they knew that they have to kill such a young girl. Now... If I were to kill you, would the effect of mind control be erased from the maids?” I replied and ask.

“Indeed... If you were to kill me, the effect of the mind control will be erased and the maid will turn back to normal.” I see him forcefully make a smile after saying that statement. Not long after, he continue his speech,

“From what it seems, you saying that, it looks like you indeed want to kill me huh? Then do you mind if I were to put one last struggle?”

I immediately replied, “Shut up old man, if you really want to put up last struggle just start already. But if you want to self-destruct, just know that when I found out, you will suffer something far worse than death” I say that as a threat, but I do have a plan if he decided to pull that trick on me.

“Okay then, I should start.”

The mana in the air was being absorb by him. Does he really want to self-destruct?! I jump back and create a bunch of blue fireball to attack him in an instant.

Hey voice. Can you make a type of holy fireball? If you could, make two of them.

<Notice. Creating two holy fireball. Because of the skill ‘Master of holy magic’, holy magic will be used instead of consuming more MP>

Hmm? Okay...

“Hey old man, are really trying to self-destruct?!”

“No... This is just a substitution in order to make my hand and feet worked again.”

Not long after, I see a new skill popped out from his appraisal result, it was the ‘Mana Absorb’ skill. So he absorbing this much amount of mana at the same time makes him able to use the Mana Absorb skill huh? I guess it make sense because that’s also why I have the skill in the first place.

“Congratulations! It seems you have obtained a new skill!” I shout at him.

“Oh! Really? You have the appraisal skill? You sure you want to share this information?” He said that while trying to stand up.

“I mean, you’re going to die anyways.”

He chuckle the said, “I hope you could actually kill me.”

“... What’s your deal though? Before you were so arrogant and now you’re so humble.”

It seems like he could stand up and use his hands again. He then said, “That’s because I looked down on you. I’m sorry. Right now I will acknowledge you as a warrior and not a kid, you better be ready.”

Without saying anything I launched all of my blue fireball at him at an insanely fast speed. It’s so fast that it left an after image and I could still feel the heat of the blue fireball behind me. Only after a couple moments later I could sense the heat of the fireball suddenly move in the direction I aimed it.

The impact of the many blue fireball create a huge dust cloud. Only after it clears I could see that I’ve made a hole through the training ground to the outside of the palace, it looks like the outside is just a massive plain field. I search for the Minotaur.

<Notice. Holy Fireball has been crea->

Hey voice. Store the holy fireball.

<Notice. Storing two holy fireball>

Hmm... Did I turned him to dust? I searched through the huge rubble of the training ground. I didn’t know that I could launch an attack that fast, don’t blame me okay?!

I started to lift the rubble away. Then after moving things left and right for about 5 minutes, I finally find the Minotaur body. It was charred as black as a charcoal. He didn’t even resist the damage, he said he will do his best, but all I could see is just an aftermath of an act. He acted like he’s serious, but he really does accept his fate.

I honestly don’t know what his motive to be doing something like this is. But I don’t want to think about that right now. In the end I defeated the Minotaur. I hope I didn’t get expelled from this palace like Theseus did.

After I properly buried the Minotaur body in the middle of the training ground, I head back to my room trying to continue my daily life. Although, it would be more difficult knowing that I’m basically responsible for the survival of this castle.

Anyway. Right now I need to basically revive Kaiser and the three trainer back after what that Minotaur has done. I also need to make sure that the maid did come back to their own sense.

You know what... I'm going to make everybody believe that I'm not the one that save the castle! Yeah, that sounded like a good idea! I hope the author doesn't jinx this one.

Capra

HP : 544

ATK : 208

MP : 198

SP : 279

Avg : 307

The only Minotaur in Everlasting Embrace. His entire village was massacred by the previous Mother Tree king. Now, he's looking for vengeance, trying to overthrow the current the king of Mother Tree, Kaiser.



INTERLUDE 3

THE CAT'S DIARY

1

Since defeating the Pegasus's I felt the monster here become more active. Though almost none of them pose a threat to me. In fact the most common monster here, the everlasting slime, could be defeated by just swinging my paw around. Also, my body now heals up on itself. Maybe it's because I used the healer skill over and over again. I wonder how much stronger I've become?

There's a lot of goblins approaching me now. They're the everlasting goblins. These goblins doesn't have any magic capabilities, but sometimes there's one or two that can do it. I called them the shaman ever goblin, their magic capabilities isn't strong whatsoever, but they give a little bit variation of color when attacking. All I could see for these couple of days is just red blood from all the monster I've killed and a little tint of other color from the slime's leftover bodily fluids.

I also discover that there's two type of magic. One, is the magic that we chant/cast without using skill. This type of magic is significantly weaker than magic that come from a skill. This type of magic is done by creating your own magic circle. And the second type of magic is a magic that came from a skill, this type of magic will be cast at a quicker pace and also more deadly.

Talking about that, Lia's Perseverance skill is basically these two types combined together. She could create any magic like the 'skill-less magic', but

the power will be as strong as, or even stronger than the 'skilled magic'. Which makes her skill the more OP.

This is also why I can't steal the slime's elemental magic. That's because their body was the one that adjusted to the environment, therefore they could use elemental magic depends on the environment. But even so, I could just mimic their appearance and use the elemental magic using this technique.

Anyway. Right now I'm planning to just leisurely spend my time and just taking a stroll all over this 'grove'. I still don't understand why this place was called a grove's and not a forest. Maybe a forest in this realm is way bigger? Maybe the mother tree that Lia's been living in is just a normal tree. But because it grows on this 'grove' it is called the mother tree.

Ooh! That's another theory! I'm gonna work on that too!

CHAPTER 9

PREPARING TO THE ARCHES

1

It has been a couple of days since I fought the Minotaur. Everything seems to come back to normal and I also started training with Selena, Atro, and Vargas. Their training lessons was legit, but I don't really learn anything. I still keep the act that I couldn't use holy magic. All of the maids comes back to their senses, and the five maids that helped me keep any maid's away so my plan was not spoiled was now functioning as a normal maid. I told them to keep secret about this, but in reality, I don't really care if my action was spoiled. Though if that happens, I just hope that everyone doesn't become dependent to me.

Right now I'm sitting in my original room reading a book. I'm still reading about magic casting and modifying. I'm trying to find if I could cast magic faster. In searching for those, I come across about 'Making magic out of mana in the air'. So basically the first few pages explained that a skill is essentially a cheat code and you could actually cast any elemental magic from thin air, although depending on how much mana is in the air, your spell will be afflicted by it. If the concentration of mana in the air is dense, then you could cast stronger magic. And if it's thin, then your spell will be weaker.

I guess it does make sense. Inonami also explained to me that people could still do farming and get good crops, but people with farming skill is on another level. So she does said that you could still use magic despite doesn't

have any skill about that magic whatsoever. But I'm pretty sure she also explain that there's some magic that couldn't be replicated without skill. Well, from what this book said is that 'magic that has direct connection with the system must be used via skill'. For example, the appraisal skill is a skill that display ones stats in the system. Because of that, you cannot replicate the appraisal skill without a skill. Unless if you had the perseverance skill (UwU).

I had training with Vargas a couple hour from now so I closed my book and take a shower. Man... These past couple of days has been pretty smooth. I really wanted the days to just be like this. But seeing that there's a new chapter in the novel means that something's about to happen. *Damn you author!*

Once I'm done showering, I put on some ordinary clothes and head straight to the training ground. Because the training ground was destroyed, the Kaiser make a full overhaul to it. I could visit it every now and then and see the outside world. It was a huge plain field filled with one meter long grass as long as the eye could see. Right now, the training ground was overhauled and was bigger, almost 3 times bigger. Because there's a connection tunnel from the training ground to the other building and the maze, it only expand in one direction, thus making it a rectangle.

I arrived at the training ground and immediately greeted by the cheerful Selena. "Yoohoo... You're diligent! You haven't skip any training session yet!" Obviously my training right now was with Vargas, but Selena always greeted me once I entered the training ground.

I replied, "Haha... Hello Selena! You know... I don't know how to respond to that. Should I thank you?" I honestly don't know what to respond. Though if I were being honest, the training session feels like a waste of time because my understanding about magic and swordsmanship is already pretty high. Oh yeah, my swordplay skill has leveled up to level 9 now! Pretty neat!

Not long after I said my greetings to Selena, Vargas comes in and greet me too. "Yo! You ready for today?" He sound excited. From what I could see, Vargas is very fond about swordsmanship. Every swing that he deliver is full of meaning. I myself grow respect for him because of this trait. He's unique because of this trait, but that doesn't mean I like him and hitting on him. There's a clear margin between 'like' and 'respect' okay?

Anyway, we started to spar. Just a couple seconds since we started sparring and my mind is already drifted off somewhere. I was thinking about the difference between the magic made by using mana in the air and the magic made by the origin color. Because I haven't reach that part of the book, I started hypothesizing.

First, I'm almost certain that creating skill with origin color will be much much stronger than making it from the mana in the air. Second, making a spell using origin color probably will not use any MP and the casting time will be much faster. Obviously you have to work unimaginably harder in order to create magic from the origin color, so there should be a massive pay off if you could pull that off right?

While I'm lost in my thought, Vargas attack become fiercer. But my movement adjust to his right away. I subconsciously show the upper hand on Vargas, thus he said, "Hey, you become much faster and more powerful! Does my training plan really worked that well?!"

He sounded so enthusiastic that I couldn't deny him. I said, "Y-yeah! Your plan really suit me well! I don't know if other would be as suited as me though." I said with the intention to not make his ego higher.

But then he said, "It's okay! That means I could make an effective training plan!" Oh no... His ego went up! Wait... No... His ego is already high in the first place, so this is fine... I hope.

After that nonsense I come back to my thought. I'm thinking on how Nate's doing. Maybe I have to get a permission to go outside of the palace, meet him, and pick him up. I mean, the training time is almost over in just a couple more days, and so we have to get out from this palace. It's nice living in a luxury place without paying anything though. I then remember that this realm was that of Inonami's domain expansion. I wonder if I could do the same thing. At least make a small house to sleep anywhere rent free right?

Long story short, I'm finished with the sword training. Wait, I didn't explain how the sparring works huh? Well, to make it simple, there's 5 round of 10-15 minutes sparring and 5 minutes break in between them. Now, I head back to my room. There's already food inside my room, waiting for me to eat it. I take a seat and a glass full of water. I then stared at the food. It was a

simple chicken curry, but the smell that it makes are super strong and delicious. My tongue started to water but I hold the urge down and stand up. You see, I actually want to take a shower first then I eat the meal. But seeing how delicious the smell is, I'm doubting myself.

I walked towards the shower and started to put off my dirty clothes off. When stepping to the shower I thought to myself, if Inonami's domain could produce such food, could she really starve? She basically have an unlimited supply of food inside of her own realm right? I bet that this 'domain expansion' ability is super hard to get.

Anyway. There's three more days before I will be kicked out of here. The next place that we're heading is called the 'Frigid Arches', and we are assigned to defeat its guardian, Rotting Treehulk. I sighed and finished my shower. Damn, this body is reeaally small, and it's flat too.

I put on a pajamas and started eating the curry. As I was expected, it was super delicious. The taste is in a perfect harmony! To be honest, I wanted to describe it more, but this isn't food wars, so I'm just going to stop here.

After eating I started to train and experiment with the origin color again. Once I'm in the zone I continue to think, tomorrow I planned to get out from here and search for Nate, but I have to get the Kaiser permission first huh? Hmm... Well, whatever, I'll ask him tonight then. It's still like 3 pm, so I still have plenty of time to train.

Thus I continue to train on controlling and separating the origin color.

#

Morning has come, the sun rays is hitting my window, and I'm currently packing my stuff up to go outside to the forest and find that cat. I already have the Kaiser permission to go outside to find that cat but the catch is that I have to go back before dawn and I'm going to be accompanied by Selena, Atro, and Vargas.

After I pack my back I head to the throne room to meet the others. The throne room is also the only room in this whole palace that has a gate connecting to the Zeruah Grove. Once I arrived there, there's already Selena and Atro waiting, but Vargas was nowhere to be seen. Asked them, "So...

You guys are the one that will accompany me?” Well, Kaiser is also not here right now, so I guess it’s just us then. Maybe they have something to do somewhere. I’m not gonna question it.

Before they could even answer I immediately head towards the portal. If I remember correctly, Nate went out the portal right after Kaiser said that the training will only be doable for me. Therefore he should be out training and hunting down monster left and right, right? Anyway, when the three trainer notice me already going, the follow short after.

The feeling when going through the portal doesn’t seem to change whatsoever. I still feel sick and want to throw up the moment I started to walk inside of the portal. As much as I hate this though, it’s still an amazing technology, or should I say magic?

When we arrived at the opposite side of the portal, I could immediately smell corpses of dead slime and other monsters. You see, when I fought the rabbit, they didn’t actually disappear but instead Inonami burn them all down using fire, same with other monster we kill along the way when travelling with Inonami. Now, because there’s a rotting smell of dead monster everywhere, I know that Nate has been busy here and does not bother to clean up the mess despite having a skill that could steal other skills.

The smell is quite strong, but I couldn’t sense any living being within my detection skill, that means Nate has been killing off monster from right the moment he went outside of the Mother Tree. Because of the smell, I couldn’t help but to cover up my nose from it. It seems that Selena and Atro also cover up their nose.

I create three pieces of clothes with the help of the voice, and create it with the attribute of cleansing and purifying for covering up our nose. The design is not that far from a modern day medical mask. Why you asked? Didn’t I tell you? It smells so BAD, I couldn’t help it, okay? Anyways, once that’s solved we started finding Nate using the trace of monster he left behind. The monsters corpses is starting to consolidate with the ground but we could still get a rough estimate as of where Nate went.

Two hours went by and the sun is starting to reach its peak. We haven’t found Nate yet. How far does he go? He couldn’t be that far right? Right?

Not so long after, we arrived at some sort of a nest but it's empty. The nest is similar to that of a mammal nest but it's a lot bigger and there aren't any sign of life form (baby) where the thatch is. In a short glance this just looked like a normal nest, but with my detection skill I could sense a faint abnormal mana wave here. It almost feels like a monster shoot out a massive spell. I talk to Selena and Atro about this and told them to follow me.

I traced where the mana wave originated from. After walking for just a couple of minutes, we finally arrived where the mana wave is coming from. Though, from what it seems, there's nothing here whatsoever. But then Selena said something.

She said that there was a small creature that has passed out here, but then she said that the creature has left just a couple of hour ago. From what she said to me, that small creature could be Nate. I asked her as of why she come to such a conclusion. But she just said that she had some sort of a 'survival skill'.

I decided to search this area for a short while. After a short while I found something. It's still a part of a severed monster corpse but its fresh, there's still blood leaking from it. I asked Selena to come over and ask her. She said that this is a main body of an everlasting goblin, but she also said that everlasting goblin should not be in this area of the forest. I took another glance at the severed body, it is torn apart like a lion has been feasting to it. She said again that this corpse is still fresh, she said that it's only been a couple of hour since the goblin was killed. Knowing that I search the surrounding area, looking for another corpses.

After that discovery Atro shouted something from a distance, "Hey both of you, look at this!" It was a faint trail of blood. Selena said that the trail was the goblin's blood. We followed the trail, hoping we could find another clue. I also hope that this whole thing was not some sort of a red herring.

We've been following this blood trail for about 10 minutes now. The blood seems to get brighter and more fresh as we followed the trails. After a short while we heard screaming of pain in the distance.

"That's the sound of the goblin screeching!" Selena shout.

We ran towards the noise immediately.

After we arrived, we see a black slime defeating a lot of goblins. “What? Everlasting Slime are not supposed to be this strong! Defeating this much goblins are almost at the same level of Kaiser.” Selena said.

Atro whispered, “What do you think we should do? If this continue, the balance of power in this world would be destroyed.”

“Well, we should prevent that from happening, so I guess we have to defeat the slime then.” Selena replied.

I stand back to make some space for them.

Atro give a sign and they charge forward. Selena launches water blade at the slime and Atro swing his sword at it.

The slime noticed and easily evade all of it.

Selena then create a water barrier trapping them inside with the slime. Atro keeps on swinging his sword, and it seems like each swing that he does, the brighter his sword get.

When I looked their teamwork, it is clearly much better than the three assassin trying to kill me. Which raise a question, ‘How the hell did they got caught by the Minotaur? Surely with teamwork, they will be much stronger than him.’

Anyway, I already use appraisal on it. And of course, you guys already know it, it’s freaking Nate. Though, I don’t really know why that cat has turned into a slime.

His stats also raise by a lot, look at this!

Nate ***, *Felis catus* Lv.1**

Age : 4 Months

Status : Transformed, Everlasting Slime

Stats :

HP: 421/421 SPD: 217

ATK: 256 DEF: 39

MP: 841/841 SP: 644/644

Avg. 540

Skill:		Title:
Envy	Wing Lv.7	Holder of Envy (5%)
Telepathy Lv.3	Flame Shot Lv.5	
Self-Healing Lv.1		

Look at that! If I remember correctly his stats last time was just about a third of this. That means that his stats has rose three fold. FYI, my stats now has also improved since the Minotaur battle, but it's only two fold.

That's one thing, now let's get to the skill and ability. It seems like he already use his 'Envy' to get the Pegasus skill. He also got the 'Self-Healing' skill. That's probably from the healer. I don't know how he got this skill though, because if I remember, the criteria for stealing a skill is to know what skill you want to steal. But I didn't tell Nate what skill does the Pegasus's have, maybe he figured it out himself? Oh! His 'Holder of Envy' title has also risen in the percentage? I wonder what that means. Now let's talk about his 'Status'. He's currently in a 'transformed' state. Seeing he doesn't have any skill about transforming himself, it's probably come from an existing skill or he transfer his stats or even his soul to other monster. Hmm... Probably not though, he doesn't have any skill about stats transfer, seeing a stats is linked with the system, you had to have some sort of a skill to transfer it right? Just like appraisal.

I let Selena and Atro fight Nate to see how much he could withstand fighting both of them with his current ability. For me fighting both of them is not really that hard because I basically have endless amount of skill. Let's see what Nate could do. Right now he's not in so much of a pinch, but he's struggling. If things got dicey, I'll intervene and stop them, you guys don't have to be worried.

Selena water prison really helps to minimize Nate's movement pretty well. Though because slime doesn't really have a backbone, Nate's movement were more unpredictable and abnormal. Oh yeah, it seems that Nate hasn't notice my presence here. Well, it make sense because he doesn't really have any detection like skill. But again, it doesn't always have to be a skill. Nate's 'cat reflexes' is a scary ability that he had even before transported to this world.

Atro sword is like a ray of light now. In fact, it's so bright that it looked like a flashlight from here. Atro movement is also getting sharper but Nate flexibility for not having a back bone is still winning. Selena is still casting a lot of water blade at the slime but she seemed to be hesitating, probably because she's afraid to hit Atro.

The battle is just like a slime jumping around inside of a cage and two people trying to swat a fly. Honestly, it's quite funny seeing that they couldn't even land a single hit on the slime.

The fight has been going on for about 15 minutes now, and none of them seems to make any progress. It seems like Nate also doesn't want to hurt them either. To be honest, Nate could probably just get out from the water cage unscathed, I don't know what's preventing him from doing so. Anyway, I decided to go inside of the cage and stop this madness.

I go inside of the cage and immediately tell Selena and Atro to stop their attacks. Once they hear me, they surprisingly very obedient and stop their attacks and retreat back. I also tell Selena to put down the water prison.

After that's sorted out, I approach the slime and the slime grows in size and took a form of a person. Nate current form looked like the healer from when we just arrived. Then he talk, "Yo! You're done with your training in that luxury palace?"

I then replied, "Are mad to me because of that?"

"No... So, how's your stats been doing? For me, I can't tell if my stats rise a lot or just a few." His voice right now was like a girl because he change himself to mimic of that of the healer. Thinking of it, he could do 'experiment' with the healer's body, and he's a guy, this is yabai.

Anyway. I replied with, "Your stats grow three folds from last time, while mine is only two folds. I guess hunting monster raise your stats faster huh?"

He doesn't seemed to be shocked about the fact that his stats is higher than mine. He just paused for a bit and continue, "So, how do you think about the transformation?"

“I think it’s quite impeccable, but someone with the ability to appraise you, I think your disguised is nothing.”

Nate smiled a bit and his body suddenly glows. After his body stopped glowing he said to appraise him once more, so I did what he asked me to do. With that I come to shock, all of his stats are completely different, even his name are different. Look at this,

Everlasting Healer Lv.25

Status : Transformed, Everlasting Healer

Stats :

HP: 300 / 300 SPD: 60

ATK: - DEF: 10

MP: 1000 / 1000 SP: - / -

Skill :

Healing Lv.1 Resurrection Lv.5

His stats and all of his skill and title are gone, he seems to mimic that of the Healer stats and skills. But there’s still one thing, the status. I didn’t dare to talk about that and keep it a secret. I just tell him that some people might still know that you use transformation.

I then asked about the skill that could do this. He said it’s the ‘Envy’ skill. Before he could explain any further, Selena jumps in and ask me is the person before me the one that we’ve been looking for, and I hastily said yes. After knowing that she then ask us to quickly get to the castle again. I looked around and the sun has reached its peak. So we decided to quickly head back.

While walking back Nate explain that the envy skill could not only steal skill but it could also steal appearance. He continued and said that the only thing the envy skill couldn’t skill is talent or non-skill abilities, like farming, backflip, and even a magic spell created from mana in the atmosphere. So, what he’s trying to say is that the envy skill does have some limitation.

Thinking about it, I haven’t found any limitation to the Perseverance skill. Though, I haven’t tried to recreate skill such as envy or other high grade ones. Maybe those are my skill limitation? I don’t know, haven’t tried it yet. Maybe later. Right now there’s Selena and Atro here.

I use telepathy to tell Nate about me hiding my perseverance skill and he agree to cooperate. He also goes back to his cat form and right now are in my arms. Even with countless killing, his cat fur was still much groomed. I ask him does he groomed his body by licking it. He answered that he never lick his body at all. I then wonder if his cat fur has some sort of a special property like ‘self-cleaning’ or something.

We walked back to the Mother Tree without any challenges. It seems like Nate literally killed almost every single monster population in the Zeruiah’s Grove. We arrived at the throne room at around 3 pm, I asked Atro and Selena to provide the cat with its own room, and they did what I told them to do immediately. They provide him with room the same as mine, not smaller, nor bigger. I’ll let Nate rest for the day and I went back to my room to train. Tomorrow we’ll be heading to the arches, so I better pack things up. Yes, I can be nice to people too okay?

Anyways, our day is not very uneventful, so it’s already been the next day. I didn’t really learn anything last night, so you guys aren’t missing on anything.

Right now I’m going around the weaponry. Why? Because the Kaiser visit me this morning and offer me to grab any weapon I want from the weaponry. I asked Kaiser whether or not the cat could get its own weapon and he said yes, so I also bring Nate with me. You wouldn’t believe how many weapons are in here. There’s also various kinds of weapons here and Kaiser told me that every single one of them have different attribute. There’s nunchucks, bow, morning star, katana, wooden staff, kusarigama, etc.

I appraise each one of them carefully to see their attribute but there’s only one weapon that stand out to me and it’s very compatible with my abilities. It’s called ‘Proto-reactive Evolution Sword, Starlight.’ It’s a sword with white hilt and guard but golden blade, overall it’s a pretty simple sword. But the attribute of this sword suit my title and skills.

Proto-reactive Evolution Sword, Starlight

Status : Broken

ATK : +20 DEF : +10

MP : +40 SPD : +20

Description:

A piece of broken sword left behind by one of the pervious guardian of the Stargate. Before the maker left and ascend to the stars above, she left her broken sword behind hoping someone would find a use. The blade of this sword were made purely out of grand crystalline, material that will not bend or shatter. It is said that in its prime, this sword could gather all the star in the sky in order to strengthen its user. The attribute of this weapon is that it will evolve together with the holder, and it's said that by giving this sword constant flow of holy magic the sword will eventually be fixed back. The sword has the ability to considerably increase the user movement and attack speed.

With the attribute like that, I immediately grab the sword. Oh yeah, there's also various accessory in this weaponry. I don't know why, but okay.

I grabbed the accessory called 'God of Time Timepiece'. It's a necklace with an hourglass symbol at the end. The accessory attribute is to slowdown time for only me. After I grabbed it, I immediately use it to see how much does it slowed down time. And it's pretty surprising. The time slowed down about 1.5 times of that the normal time. So I basically could move and think 1.5 times faster now.

God of Time Timepiece

ATK : +0 DEF : +0
MP : +0 SPD : +50

Description:

A necklace with golden chain and a rainbow colored hourglass like pendant at the end of it. This necklace have the ability to slowdown time for 30 minutes with 1 hour cooldown.

After grabbing my stuff, I check back on Nate and see what he chooses. I see that he had transferred to his healer form. I see that he had picked some sort of a nunchucks with four baton rather than two that's connected with a retractable chains. Looking at it again, it looked more like a four sectioned staff rather than nunchucks. I see that the chains could be retracted and the weapon take a form of a staff, that's why I called it a four section staff.

I take my orb and appraise the weapon,

Staff of Courehouse

ATK : +100% DEF : +100% (When used)
MP : +0 SPD : -100% (When used)

Description:

A four sectioned staff with the end being a spike that could pierce anything, even the grand crystal, if used properly and with enough power. This staff was made from the

core of the world tree, thus the holder will have a longer life when in possession. When attacking, the user will be immobile but the defense and attack stats will be doubled. This staff can reach every space whether or not that's covered or uncovered in a 100 meter radius, but the enemy could still blocked it. If the user has high mobility stats, the attack from this weapon is much faster thus making it harder to blocked or dodge. While in use, this staff improve the target concentration ability. If an enemy were being hit by this staff, their movement will be slowed with every hit they receive.

Nate truly have made a right choice with this one. Although there's one problem if I were the one who choose this, I couldn't use nunchucks type weapon. That's not counting the fact that the staff is almost 2 times taller than my body. To be honest, I don't even know how Nate will be able to use this staff either. Oh yeah, one other thing that Nate brought was a space ring that could store a room full of items. When I asked him where he found it, he said that there's only one, so I just give up. First come, first serve I guess.

Anyways. After choosing our weapon we head to the throne room and talk with the Kaiser. We said our goodbye and he open up a different gate right beside us. He said that this gate supposed to lead us to the nearest save point in the frigid arches. All three trainer are also present and are also saying their goodbyes to me.

Wait, there's three of them? Where's the other one when you guys come and search for me? Said Nate.

I use telepathy with Nate, *"I don't know. By the way, that one is Vargas."*

You did say that the Kaiser go somewhere. So did the Kaiser go with Vargas?

"I don't know." I replied

They probably planning to surprise you when we arrived in the frigid arches.

"Why'd you think like that? And why do I have a feeling you're making a smirk right now?" We're exchanging dialogue through telepathy while the Kaiser told us about our next destination. To be honest, I don't really care what Kaiser said right now. I already did my research throughout the day, reading books.

I didn't say that it'll be a nice surprise. It could be a monster or even a trap.

"Is that what your cat instinct tell you?" I ask, but all I could sense was the cat shrugging back to me. He didn't say anything else after that.

Our next journey and potentially final journey in the Everlasting Embrace are now presented right in front of us. The only thing I remember Kaiser said is that the Treehulk specialized in melee attack and you'd be dead once you get hit but its movement were slow, anything else other than that just went out my other ears.

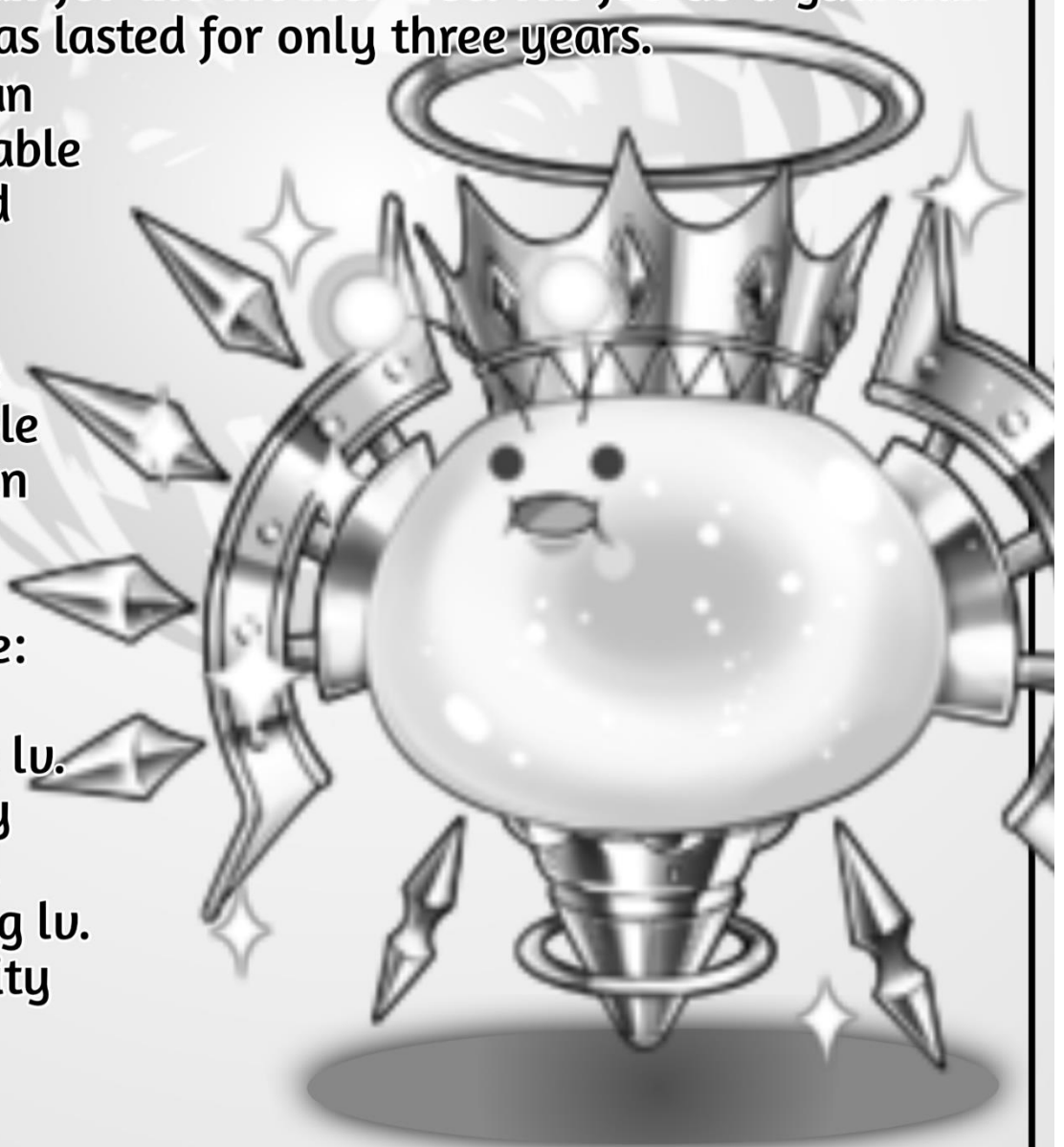
At last we stepped into the portal. Ugh... Why do I always get nauseous every time I enter this thing?! Anyways, here we go, to the Arches!

Kaiser

King of everlasting slime, Kaiser. This chubby looking blob doesn't really have any gender, therefore people could refer to it as a 'she' or a 'he'. Kaiser prefer if someone called him a guy instead of a girl. This slime is in fact the oldest everlasting slime in the whole realm but he is the youngest guardian amongst all the other. As an everlasting slime, his regenerative ability is impeccable because of that, he got nominated as the new guardian for the mother tree. His job as a guardian right now has lasted for only three years.

As a guardian he must be able to withstand a threat to his region, therefore he have a couple useful skill in his arsenal.

Here are a few example:
Thought acceleration lv. 9, Durability lv.9, Spatial maneuvering lv. 8, Immortality lv.5, etc.



CHAPTER 10

FRIGID ARCHES IS BEAUTIFUL?

1

When I set foot at the other side of the portal, I was immediately hit by a breeze of cold air, I reflexively close my eye and put my hand on both side of my shoulder. This feels like I'm standing on top of the mountain while it's raining. Yeah, the air here is so chilling. It's almost freezing. When I open my eyes, I was actually in the middle of a stone bridge connecting two land separated by a ginormous ravine.

"Wow... This looked like something from an adventure fantasy film!" The cat said.

In the either side of the ravine there's waterfall pouring down to the endless void below. When I look up, the sun couldn't be seen, instead this place seemed to be in a constant cloudy state. It's like time has stopped. There's fog everywhere because of the waterfall. Apart from the chilling air, there's also a feeling like you're being hit by little tiny raindrop. The wind here are also quite fierce. Oh, didn't I say that we're teleported in the middle of a bridge? Yeah, it feels like we're going to fall any moment now.

I looked back at the portal that Kaiser create and it seems like it's getting smaller. So this is the frigid arches huh? I don't see any arches though. Its sure cold, but where's arches?

All I can hear right now are just the reverberation of the waterfall. Even though there seemed to be endless void below us, I could still hear the sound of the water hitting the ground below us. I could also hear a faint sound of bird chirping from the sky. But overall, the sound of the waterfall is the loudest, even though both of the waterfall are still quite far from where we're standing. Anyways. It seems like the bridge where we're standing still span out even further up ahead.

I nod at Nate and we decided to start walking forward. The wind here is so strong and everywhere that I've lost balance for about three times now. Good thing that the bridge we're on is quite wide. If it's any thinner, I'd be done for.

We continue to walk over the ginormous ravine. It seems like the fog is getting thinner, I could now see the sun on the horizon. By the way, how far is the Frigid Arches from the Mother Tree? It seems like we're in a completely different world from where we were before.

We've been walking for about 1 hour now. Now there seems to be broken pillar at the either side of the bridge and every pillar beside it seems taller than the previous one. Maybe if we keep walking, the pillar will eventually become arches? I honestly don't know what to react. My mind is going blank every now and then. The first few times I experience this I thought it's because of how beautiful the scenery and how cold the air is. But after experiencing it for several times I've finally notice. I asked Nate about this, but he said that he haven't experiencing something like I did.

I activate my detection skill and immediately realize that the fog surrounding us were actually magic. I don't know why it only target and affect me though. I tell the voice to examine the fog around us. The voice said that the fog has some sleeping drug effect and it only target humans. Well, that makes sense I guess.

I also get more information about the fog. The voice said that the waterfall itself has a sleeping effect. I also use the orb on this place,

<Current Place : Frigid Arches

Possible enemies :

Ever Healer (2 Star)

Ever Merman (2 Star)

Ever Treeant (2+ Star)

Pegasus (3 Star)

Medusa (3 Star)

Area Guardian : Lapuk the Rotting Treehulk

Description : ‘Thy whom enter here, shall not leave.’

End of Report->

...

The description is scary dude. What the heck is that? Who made the description being like that? I mean, we got our warning at least.

So far there’re no monster around us. Maybe when we get to the end of this bridge we’ll finally meet one. It’s not like I’m looking forward to it though. I actually prefer it to be like this.

“There’s something approaching... It seems to be pretty slow though” Nate said to me using telepathy.

“Is that your cat instinct again?” Honestly, the cat instinct is actually way better than my detection? (LOL)

Anyway. Nate nodded at me and he transformed himself to his healer form. The only thing different is that now Nate has wings growing out from his back. So that’s the ‘wing’ skill huh? It literally grows you a pair of wings. So skill could also make you mutate? That’s scary and awesome at the same time!

I notice that a couple of flying monster has entered my ‘detection’ zone. Judging by the orb, the only flying monster here should be the Pegasus, and there’re five of them. I launch a fireball through the thick fog towards one of the Pegasus. Because I have the detection skill, I could basically pin point their position, therefore I decided to immediately launch a fireball at them while they still couldn’t see us.

“Did you hit them?” Nate asked.

“Hmm... I did... But I think I didn’t take them down.”

“Well, I’m going to check then.”

“Okay.”

So I just let Nate go and check on them. If 'wing' is a skill, then I probably could just recreate that skill and even make it better, but I decided to not do that and respect Nate.

While Nate do that, I just take a seat and expand my detection skill. If I expand this skill, the amount of MP it will absorb will be multiplied. But thank god the mana here is also quite dense. It might be even denser than the mana in the Mother Tree and Zeruiah Grove. I expand my detection skill and I found another three Pegasus's coming towards here. Though, they're not from where the five Pegasus's came from. They're heading straight into me!

I turn my back and there they are. One of them stood on top of the bridge with me, while the other two are flying next to me. I'm surrounded. Well, this is the first time I get to test out my strength since last time, so I'm going to cherish this.

I create a sphere made out of normal fireball. Surprisingly, being inside here actually not that hot. It's actually quite normal, maybe it's because the air surrounding me are cold. This sphere of fireball could be an offense and defense at the same time. While I'm protected by this sphere, I prepare my sword and start inserting holy magic inside of it. The sword glows white. I cancel my fireball barrier and swing my sword at the Pegasus in front of me. A white streak shot out from my sword, cleanly slicing the Pegasus head off. I took a second glance at the sword. Damn, this sword is a national treasure or what? The other two Pegasus seeing me effortlessly chopping off their friends head immediately ran off. I couldn't blame them though, I'd probably do the same if I were them. I wonder how Nate's doing.

After waiting for about 10 minutes Nate finally came back. I asked him what's wrong and what took him so long. He said that he wanted to steal their skill again in order to increase his already existing skill. I appraise him, and sure enough, his skill level, especially the skill from the Pegasus's. They're now all level 9. So you also could increase skill level by doing that huh? That's unique, though as far as I know, the only one who could do that are the one that has the envy skill, so it's quite rare.

I asked him again on why did it took him so long. He just said that the envy skill only work if he's not moving, and he said that flying still in the air are still considered as moving. So... He landed somewhere? I asked him

where, but he just said that it's a secret. I don't know why that's a secret though. The author probably just way too lazy thinking of a place where he could land. We decided to keep going and Nate has turn himself back to being a cat.

We walked again for a bit and the broken pillar on the either side of the bridge has become arches that emit ice blue aura. So my assumptions are indeed correct. It seems like the blue aura emanating from the pillars have some sort of a slowing attribute like in those tower defense game. Once again, it seems that Nate doesn't even bother about this. The attribute probably only works on human.

We kept on walking until we arrive in front of another tree. It's not as huge as the Mother Tree, but this tree emanates more aura than the Mother Tree. There's also doesn't seems to be an opening for us to go in. Suddenly the aura from the tree launches forward at us and a bunch of monsters started to emerge from our back.

Is that a call? You could make a call by launching an aura just like that? Then the realization hit me. I appraise the tree using my appraisal,

Lapuk, Rotting Treehulk Lv.30

Age : 2500+ Years

Status : Rotting, Weakened

Stats :

HP: 4598/4598 (-25%) SPD: 0 (-100%)

ATK: 517 (-50%) DEF: 165 (-50%)

MP: 4961/4961 (-10%) SP: 492/492 (-90%)

Avg. 4400 (Former) | 2642 (Current)

Skill:

- | | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Rot Attack Lv.10 | Hardened Lv.10 | Dark Magic Lv.10 | Hit Lv.10 |
| Mana Absorb Lv.10 | Terra Magic Lv.10 | Physical Res Lv.10 | HP Recovery Lv.10 |
| Endurance Lv.10 | Fulgur Magic Lv.10 | Rot Defense Lv.10 | Stronghold Lv.10 |
| Cold Res Lv. 10 | Cold Immunity | Longevity Lv.10 | Magic Attack Lv.8 |
| Determination | Leadership Lv.10 | Holy Res Lv.8 | Water Res Lv.10 |
| Water Immunity | Light Magic Lv.5 | SP Consumption Immunity | |
| Hard Skin Lv.10 | Dragon Skin Lv.10 | Divine Skin Lv.3 | Prediction Lv.10 |

Advance Terra Magic Lv.10	Advance Fulgur Magic Lv.1		
Advance Mana Absorb Lv.10	Future Sight Lv.10		
Arithmetic Processing Lv.10	Advance Arithmetic Processing Lv.10		
Parallel Mind lv.1	Regeneration Lv.5	Pain Res. Lv.10	Pain Immunity
Fear Res Lv.10	Fear Immunity	Taboo Lv.7	Sense Lv.10
Night Vision Lv.10	Vision Expansion Lv.10		Clairvoyance Lv.2
Ultimate Life Lv.6	Acid Res Lv.10	Acid Immunity	Strength Lv.10
Energy Lv.10	Energy Conserve Lv.10		Rot Res Lv.1
Poison Res Lv.1			

Title:

Guardian of Frigid Arches

Rot Attribute Master

I've never seen so much skill at once. I've also never seen appraisal result being this complicated before. There're two Avg stats?! His overall stats seemed to be lowered by the status effect he has. I don't even know is this thing a he or a she. Anyway, not only his stats are all over the place, his figure is also super huge. Its mother f*cking tree after all!

The tree reach the height up to about 10 meters tall! And I still couldn't determine the diameter of this tree. But there's one thing, this tree is immobile. His SPD stats shows that it has been reduced to 0. What do you mean by 'SP Consumption Immunity'?! You're telling me that the tree couldn't get exhausted? That's freaking broken. What's the difference between 'Rot Defense' and 'Rot Res'? Maybe rot defense is that when we make direct contact with it, we will get rotten?! That's another OP skill. Not to mention that most of the skill he had was level 10. That's the max level right?!

I really want to take a closer look at the tree but these monsters are just too handful. I don't want to exert all of my MP knowing the boss of this area could attack us any moment now. Because of all that, we're actually having a hard time fighting off these monsters. Nate has turned into a red slime and currently burning the monsters.

I use telepathy to Nate, *“Need help? I’m sure you already know the tree is the boss right?”*

“Yeah, you should just do something about the tree and keep an eye on it. I’ll take care of the monsters. Oh, spare the tree first yeah? I need to steal some skill.”

“Oh yeah! You could steal skills right? Why don’t we switch enemy? You fight the tree while I keep guard.”

I honestly forgot about Nate’s skill steal ability. He might as well be the key component for beating this tree.

Nate said, *“Yeah, sure... But I will need about 1 to 2 minutes in order to steal just one skill. You also had to tell me what skill I should steal and their function. Not to mention that by seeing your expression just then hinted me that the tree has a lot of skill.”*

I replied, *“You sure needs a lot of requirement to just steal one skill huh? You know what, give me a moment and I’ll give you the information about the more dangerous skill the tree had. So you just have to steal a couple of skills.”*

“Well, that’s my original plan. So yeah, I’ll defend you as far as I can. Go ahead.” Nate responded.

After Nate said that, I immediately use my appraisal on every single one of the tree skills. Just by appraising two of the skills already gave me a headache because of the amount of information. This will not be pleasurable. I feel like I wanted to throw up and just passed out right on this spot. Ugh...

#

[Nate’s POV]

I transformed into a slime and use the ‘wing’ skill. Currently, Lia is appraising Lapuk. There’re around about 100 monster surrounding us. I don’t really have a defense skill but now I have to defend Lia from getting hit by any of these monster. Using my necklace, I could see that a lot of the monster here are treeants. Every single one of them have stats on the three digits.

They seem to have the power to extend their branch like arm in order to reach me. The branch are very sharp on the end, they’re like a spear. Because I’m in my slime form, stabbing my body wouldn’t leave that much damage.

In this body, I have insane flexibility and I couldn't feel pain from any physical attack. So, with all of that, I don't have to worry about myself and just have to worry about protecting Lia.

One of the treeant launch its branch at me but I easily tank it. I launch a quick Flame shot at it and the surrounding treeant all catch fire. So, the treeant weakness is fire huh? So Lia's fireball and my flame shot would be our main attacks in this battle. Good thing is that, Lia has been practicing with her fireball, and so do I.

I started to launch my flame shot everywhere. I even tried to attack Lapuk with it. But Lapuk use earth magic to block my attack. I guess Lapuk's weakness is fire afterall.

I continue to protect Lia until she shout, "Nate, there are five skill I wanted you to steal! Dark magic, hit, mana absorb, divine skin, holy resistance!"

How many skill does this tree have?! Anyway, I take a stance in front of Lia and started using envy. I tell Lia that the treeants weakness is fire, so I assume that Lapuk's weakness is also fire. Lia nod at me and began explaining what each skill do.

At the same time, Lapuk's began attacking furiously. I guess that tree could hear what we're planning to do huh? But I don't know how though, maybe it understood human language? I guess I wouldn't be too surprised of that were the case. We're talking about the guardian of the entire Frigid Arches here.

I use telepathy, "*Lia, use telepathy I think the tree could understand what we're talking about.*" Lia look at me with confusion but in the end she nods.

She tells me that I should be focusing on stealing the holy resistance skill first before the other. I really want to ask why, but we got so little time here so I just said "yes". Because the name of the skill is pretty explanatory, I don't need Lia's description about it, I just immediately try to steal it. Though, she does say that this skill is at level 8, she then continue to say that this skill is the second lowest leveled skill the tree has.

What do you mean the second lowest? His skill are all level 10 or something?! Gosh, I wish I had the appraisal skill right now. Combine with my envy skill, I could freely steal. But I have to be grateful that I was born with this skill though.

Right now I'm completely immersed in my concentration, trying to steal its skills.

#

[Lia's POV]

“Dark magic: Skill that use dark elements, dark spirit, and malicious intent in order to activate. Its weakness is holy magic; Hit: Enhance the chance of hitting enemies; Mana absorb: Skill that allow the user to absorb mana; Divine skin: The evolved version of Dragon Skin, greatly protect the user from physical attack and magic attack.” That's what I tell Nate. I tell him the shorter version of the skill description but leaving the important details for him to still be able to steal it.

After a couple of minutes protecting him, he's finally done stealing those skills. And I just want to tell you that this sword is quite good. I'm using holy fire imbued to the sword, and it just slice the treeant like hot knife through butter.

After Nate's done stealing the skill, we change place and I'm in charge of dealing the main damage to the tree while Nate backs me up. So far, we're pretty even. The tree couldn't do much damage to us because the Hit skill is gone, but it can still block our attack because of 'Prediction'.

I tried to move faster, but the tree still blocks my attacks. I need to create an attack that couldn't be dodge and also ignore Lapuk's defense.

Hey voice. Could you make a skill that couldn't be dodge and ignore defense?

<Notice. The skill, 'Disintegration' has that characteristic. Do you want to cast another skill other than that?>

Oh yeah, that's why I tell Nate to get rid of the holy resistance skill! I guess I could tried it out.

I use telepathy, “Nate! I’m going to use disintegration, cover me up for a bit will you?”

Nate turned into his human form and nod at me. We immediately switch place and I began casting the disintegration spell with a little bit of a twist. I use the voice to help me modified the skill to be much stronger. This time, because I’m not setting up an array, the casting will be easier but if I’m distracted, the spell will immediately canceled.

I thought Nate will be troubled because he has to take care of all the monster and Lapuk at the same time. But he’s pretty calm and looks like got things sorted out. He even could use the Dark Magic that he steal a couple minutes ago quite well. Not gonna lie, I’m kinda surprised.

<Acquired skill: Parallel Processing Lv.1, due to frequent act of multitasking, skill; Parallel Processing has been acquired.>

Wow! I did not expect that coming! I guess the other effect of perseverance kicks in to play again huh? The first time is the Mana Absorb skill, now parallel processing! Thank you perseverance!

Nate is using some sort of a black barrier to protect himself. But knowing that he already have the Divine Skin skill, I don’t know why he’d still do that. I guess he wanted to just focus on the tree, limiting its movement, blocking all its attack, and doesn’t have to worry about other monster attacking him. It’s like when Inonami use her flame wall on the rabbits. For me, I casted concealing skill before casting the disintegration spell. Therefore no monster have attacked me.

I wonder how he could be so good at using the dark magic. From what the description tells me, dark magic is a magic that still uses MP, but in order for someone to use them, they need to have dark energy or some sort of thing like that inside of them. So does that mean Nate have dark energy inside of him? I mean... He’s indeed a black cat, but I don’t think that’s enough to strengthen black magic up to this extent. Maybe he does have some malicious intent inside of him. Should I be worried?

Speaking of which, he now also have the Holy Resistance skill. It’s not a high level, but seeing that Lapuk have some immunity against some element

like water and cold. I think when a resistance skill reach its max level, it will eventually evolved to an immunity skill. That's pretty OP.

Anyways, I'm almost done casting this holy magic. I manage to cast it while thinking about something else because the voice did some of the work, and of course, my new parallel processing skill!

Seeing Nate fight surrounded with black aura around him and blasting out black spear everywhere, it's like watching two samurai going against each other. I was reminded with a show named 'Demon slayer', and this fight is like watching the fire pillar fighting the upper moon 3 but instead of fire, its black fire this time!

"Lia, I can't I cannot hold this any longer! I might be dead!" Nate shout.

I was actually quite surprised because the sound he make is like a girl sound. I guess it make sense because he takes the form of a girl body. I almost laugh hearing his voice. But I quickly get a hold of myself and finish casting the disintegration spell.

"I'm going to release it, you better get out!" I use telepathy with Nate.

I make this disintegration spell to be an AoE type of skill. Because the tree is so huge, I wanted to make sure that this spell will cover all of its body. But one thing, Nate could also get caught in with the spell. Therefore I wanted Nate to get out of the way first. Good thing that the tree is immobile. I could see that because it's SPD stats is zero.

But then I heard this, "Just Shoot!"

I was hesitant at first but if that's what Nate want, I don't mind I guess. He had the holy resistance skill anyways.

Without using the telepathy skill, I shout "I'd hope for the best outcome!" With that, I deliver the spell to the tree.

An array formed in my hand and a light beam struck the tree from above. It's like a lightning blast. The light blinded my eyes, before I close my eyes I see that Nate protect himself with the dark magic. I could also see the treeants surrounding him turned to dust. The light kept expanding, I could see that my whole body has turned white from all the light. I then closed my eyes.

.
. .
. .

I have to say, the fight is not too hard. It's just because the tree couldn't move around. His troops were easily defeated by wide area of fire magic. But there he is, standing right in front of us. It seems like the tree it's just his shells. I think I remember that one of his skills are 'SP Consumption Immunity', so this cannot even be battle of stamina. We really need to kill him using attacks.

"I'm surprised! There hasn't been any adventurer that could go this far!" The guardian, Lapuk. Has took a humanlike form. Maybe, this is his original form huh?

I used appraisal on him:

Lapuk, Rotting Treehulk Lv.30

Age : 2500+ Years

Status : Rotting

Stats :

HP: 6134/6134 SPD: 1350

ATK: 1034 DEF: 440

MP: 5512/5512 SP: 4920/4920

Avg. 4400

Skill:

- | | | |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Rot Attack Lv.10 | Hardened Lv.10 | Stronghold Lv.10 |
| Terra Magic Lv.10 | Physical Res Lv.10 | HP Recovery Lv.10 |
| Endurance Lv.10 | Fulgur Magic lv.10 | Rot Defense Lv.10 |
| Cold Res Lv. 10 | Cold Immunity | Longevity Lv.10 |
| Determination | Leadership Lv.10 | Water Res Lv.10 |
| Water Immunity | Light Magic Lv.5 | SP Consumption Immunity |
| Hard Skin Lv.10 | Dragon Skin Lv.10 | Prediction Lv.10 |
| Advance Terra Magic Lv.10 | | Advance Fulgur Magic Lv.1 |
| Advance Mana Absorb Lv.10 | | Future Sight Lv.10 |

Arithmetic Processing Lv.10		Advance Arithmetic Processing Lv.10	
Parallel Mind lv.1	Regeneration Lv.5	Pain Res. Lv.10	Pain Immunity
Fear Res Lv.10	Fear Immunity	Taboo Lv.7	Sense Lv.10
Night Vision Lv.10	Vision Expansion Lv.10		Clairvoyance Lv.2
Ultimate Life Lv.6	Acid Res Lv.10	Acid Immunity	Strength Lv.10
Energy Lv.10	Energy Conserve Lv.10		Rot Res Lv.1
Poison Res Lv.1	Magic Attack Lv.8		

Title:

Guardian of Frigid Arches

Rot Attribute Master

The health has been reset back to normal. Not only that, the debuff he had earlier is gone. Looking at him now, the tree has now stand on two leg and stretching himself. He just show that he could freely move now. How on earth are we going to fight him? I'm scared, this is like the feeling when I had to fight the acnolings. Where is Nate?

“Your shape shifting friend is dead. You killed him.” That’s what the monster said before me. It wouldn’t be too much of a problem if he died in the process, but now... I have to fight this thing on my own?!

Whoosh

I could barely see. But it looks like he whipped something at me but missed. After that a gush of wind rush from behind me. I looked back. I don’t see anything though. Then shiver runs all through my body. I’m in the middle of a forest right now. But... The bridge... The bridge has fallen. He destroyed the bridge behind me. I use vision enhancement to be able to see the bridge, but yeah, it has fallen. Not to mention, he destroyed it in a blink of an eye. That’s it, there’s nowhere to run. It’s too late.

Then he spoke, “First of all, you’re the one who attacked me first, so I have the right to kill you right now. Second, you destroyed my shell, it took me 500 years to be like that you know.”

It seems he’s angry. I couldn’t move my body. Guess I’ll die here. I didn’t expect that he has a second form. And what do you mean his weakened stats

has been lifted?! If he could do that in the first place, why did the system said he's 'weakened'?

Then he continued, "You know... That body... Has been holding me back for about 500 years. But now that I have been freed. I could move freely. I should thank you for that."

Great! I just make matter worse for myself!

Then a sound of a girl was heard from behind the monster, "F-first of all, you better be thankful. Second, I'm not dead..." It's Nate. He survived the disintegration skill... How?!

By the way, he's a stronger enemy now, don't try to provoke him you dumb!

Then the freaking guy continued, "T-third, now, that your curse has been lifted, what will you do to us? Kill us? It seems you're the type of guy that likes to joke around with your power though, that why you're cursed for 500 years like that."

Huh? What does Nate even saying?! Do you know that we're in danger right now?! Well... Thinking about it, we could possibly just respawn back, but death is still painful you know!

Lapuk seems like he's holding some emotion back. It looks like Nate has been successful at provoking the monster huh? Well...

"HAHAHAHAHAHA! How could you know that..?" Huh? The monster just started to burst out laughing? Why? He's all teary eyed now. What happened?

Nate comes to me and said something, "You should've use your orb to appraise him. I know you could appraise him using the appraisal skill, but it seems like the appraisal skill doesn't come with the same description as the orb or my necklace."

"Huh? What do you mean?" I asked.

"Just use the orb..."

I do as he say,

Lapuk, Rotting Treehulk Lv.30

Age : 2500+ Years

Status : Rotting

Stats :

HP: 6134/6134 SPD: 1350

ATK: 1034 DEF: 440

MP: 5512/5512 SP: 4920/4920

Rank : 4 Star

Description :

The guardian of the Frigid Arches. Lapuk has been guarding the frigid arches for more than two centuries, but one day one person manage to cast a curse spell on Lapuk, making him unable to move and causing the ‘Rotting’ effect. The ‘weakened’ status makes him unable to move. While the ‘Rotting’ status cause him to harm himself every time he attacks.

After looking at its description, I ask Nate back about what’s the problem. Oh yeah, it seems like Lapuk has no more will to fight after he laugh uncontrollably. I don’t know why though.

Nate said, “What? You still don’t understand! Why does sometimes you’re useful and other times you’re as dumb as a brick...”

“What!” I exclaim back.

Nate then tell me that the disintegration spell I casted actually remove one of Lapuk curses. He said that the description about Lapuk has change slightly, but he said that the pervious description gave us the instruction to either kill him, or remove his curse in order to proceed through the frigid arches and go to the next area, the Divine Bloom. Nate then continue. He said that because I lifted one of his curse we could now just pass through the frigid arches under Lapuk’s permission.

“So what you’re saying is that, we don’t have to fight and kill him?” I ask Nate.

“Yes, we don’t have to fight him. We could just continue our journey to the next area. It’s all because of your spell.” Nate replied.

Lapuk then joins in on our conversation and start to talk about our next destination, the Divine Bloom. He said that in order to enter the Divine Bloom we need to have the stats on the four digits. So in the thousands. Our current stats is half way there though.

He offers to train us getting our stats on the four digits. Nate looks like he's hesitant, but I immediately accept the offer. Nate looked at me with confusion but then just shake his head. Did I do something wrong again?

After sometimes Nate also agree and decided to join in. I didn't expect that the battle will ended up like this. To top it all off, this all happened in the span of just one hour. This is like in the show Moana where Te ka suddenly becomes Te fiti, it's honestly hard to belief. We decided to follow Lapuk.

We go in deeper to the Frigid Arches and there seems to be much more arches here. The air also becomes much colder, but there're still some plant living here. Oh yeah, if you didn't know, we've pass the bridge with the ravine by now. Right now we're walking on top of a path in the middle of a forest (again).

There's one more debuff on Lapuk's stats. I wonder if I could also get rid of it. I know there's a saying 'to not trust anyone so quickly', but this is just a little experiment between me and the voice. If the voice said that I could, I'll probably still do nothing. Well, I will not forget that every time a curse has been lifted, the stronger this guy will become, okay? There's still a chance that he could turned out to be a really bad guy.

Anyways, *Hey Voice. Is there a way to remove rotting status?*

<Notice. Status effect: Rotting, is an effect to where every attack you do, it will damage you in return. One way to remove this status effect is to use status cleansing magic or curse remove magic; like holy magic, etc.>

Hmm... Interesting, so what you're saying is that I could easily remove that status effect by just using holy magic? That's pretty cool. I didn't think that holy magic will be so versatile.

Speaking of holy magic, let's talk about Nate's dark magic shall we. How in the earth could he use dark magic so good and so fast? The fastest way to get the answer is probably to just ask him directly. So I did just that.

He said that because he has one ‘sin series’ skill, the usage of dark magic, black magic, and etc. will be enhanced. He also said that because of the ‘sin series’ he doesn’t need to have malicious intent or something like that.

Hmm... I guess that’s kinda handy.

You know... When I think back, all of our action on fighting the weakened Frigid Arches guardian we’re all coincidentally correct. From stealing the Holy Resistance skill in order to make my spell effective, to using a modified version of a disintegration spell. And let’s just ignore the fact that I hit Nate with my disintegration spell, okay?! I still wonder though as of why Lapuk and Nate are not dead when I launch that attack. I thought disintegration spell attack the soul directly...

I ask Lapuk about the disintegration spell. But he just casually said that he has more than one soul. Oh... I don’t understand why you casually answer me like that though. The fact that he has more than one soul means he has more than one live right? Isn’t that quite OP? I then ask Nate, but he just shake his head. Anyways, I don’t want to get myself a headache from thinking all of this, so I’m just going to stop here.

Whoosh

““Huh?””

Me and Lapuk said in synchronize. It seems like even Lapuk doesn’t expect that there’s something coming. Nate has turned back to his cat form so he couldn’t just say words but instead he stopped right in his track. I could clearly tell that even Nate’s cat instinct doesn’t expect this sudden visit.

The cold around the area we’re standing has completely vanished. It’s actually hot now. There’s a flying flame ‘thing’ in front of us. I don’t sense any killing intent from it though. My detection skill doesn’t sense that there will be something coming like this ‘thing’. It’s almost like that thing literally teleported here. I tried appraising it,

[Appraisal Blocked]

What?! I didn’t know that appraisal could be blocked. What is this thing doing here? I didn’t sense any ill intent, so I guess that’s fine? The cat also hasn’t said anything to me.

"Yo! It's been awhile yeah? How're you guys doing? It seems you guys have made some friends! How long has it been? It feels like forever. But it seems it's only been a couple of weeks here huh? Well, it's only been a couple of days in the real world... I hope you guys has been improving yeah? If not, then there's gonna be a surprise when you get outta here!"

CH. TEACHER 4

GETTIN' OUTTA HERE

1

Damn... There're literally no monster here. At least with this I could rest assure that they're okay. I still haven't found them yet, but because it's only been about one week, I think they're still quite far away from where I'm now camping.

The Survivalist skill have shown its effect! I haven't eaten anything for about one week now, and I still have energy to move. When I check my stats, my MP does not run out easily. This skill is only at level three, but the effect is too good. I thought I'll start being hungry or thirsty about three days in, but after one week, I still haven't feel anything.

Oh yeah, that loli said that there will be no monster here. And she's right about that, but there's also no food here! Even though I haven't feel hungry yet, I still search for food just in case I started to feel it. I also haven't found any trace of where they (the student) are. If they take a separate path, that makes sense because I came from a different area of the forest, but if my assumption are correct, they'll also ran out of food. That's assuming that the loli give them any. But if I'm correct, she didn't said anything about giving them food, so I guess she didn't. Well, I think that's my motivation for catching up to them though, not because of the monster, but because of food.

This forest is way bigger than I thought it would be. The loli did say that it'll take a month for them to get outside, but I didn't think that it'll also take

me possibly a month to catch up to them! Anyways, since she said that it'll take around about one month to go out from this forest, I did prepare some food for backup. She also said that there will be no monster here, so from the reader perspective, this will be a boring chapter huh? Do people actually read the teacher chapter though?

Anyway. There's nothing to describe about. This is a forest, so obviously there're trees everywhere. There's no path, so I'm trying to remember the map that the loli made. If I'm correct the direction or shortcut she give me has a pretty straight path. So the chance I'm screwing things up has been minimize.

I did say that I attend scout activity in the previous world, but I must admit that I'm not good with direction. That's why I'm kinda worried right now. What if I didn't catch up to them? Will they be able to get out from this forest? I don't even know if they're good with direction, let alone survive. I hope that they're okay, the worst thing they could do is to get out from the 'safe path'. That's also the worst thing that I could do. But from what I remember, the 'safe path' is quite wide, so the chance of getting out from it is quite low.

If you're wondering what I'm doing right now. I'm setting up a quick tent for me to stay for the night. The next day, I need to start running again, so I'm going to sleep early. The sun have just started to set, and my makeshift tent has been built. I set up a campfire, and start to draw a map. It's a map that the loli made few days back. I'm only remembering it through memory, so I'm sure that this map is way different than what she actually draw back then. I don't know how the girl know to make a map of the forest, if the only path that I saw in this forest were the one back when I encounter the Anisopteragon.

Did people go through the forest using that path? If that's the case, what if they encounter the Anisopteragon or the stampede of rabbits? Or maybe the human or inhabitants of this world are just that strong. If that were the case, then I'm not the protagonist then? Well, judging because there's another person that got teleported here except for me. Than this is the type of isekai anime or manga where the whole classes got teleported to another world. I

wonder who the main protagonist is... I mean, I started pretty gifted with the appraisal skill, so there's still a chance that I'm indeed the protagonist!

Anyways. It seems I could still remember what the map roughly looks like. It's time for me to go to bed! The warm of campfire makes me easier to snuggle. I'm quickly falling to sleep.

“Yes... Sleep well...”

Huh? What's that sound? It's soothing... Damn, I'd never thought I could easily fall asleep like this. This voice is super nice, I like it. Thank you whoever it is... Wait... Whose voice is this!

I immediately stand up. I notice that the campfire went out. Not long after chills goes throughout all my body. I tried to look around, but my head refuses to move. Through pure instinct I sense something behind me is approaching. It feels like somewhat like a snake, but I also feel that it's walking on all four legs.

“Why... Why don't you sleep...? It's going to be okay if you sleep...”

Is the loli lying? Why is there a monster approaching me? Or perhaps... I've gone out from the safe path. I try to move my body and jump forward. But I know that if you make a sudden move while encountering with any wild animal, they will chase you down.

The monster behind me is emitting a fearsome aura as well as a cold breath. From what I've been hearing, its sounds like my mother voice. But the more a stay awake, the worse the sound is. Right now, its breath sounds like a horse breath. When it tries to make sound, the sound comes out hoarse. Right now, it just sounds like a cow trying to say human words.

The fear still stand, but I could move my body a little. I started to walk forward and trying not to make sudden move. When I feel that I could turn my head, I very slowly turn it towards the monster. My feeling were half correct, it's a monster with a body of a horse and neck like a snake. The head itself were a mixture of a bull head and an orc head with giant fang from its lower jaw.

Compare to the skeleton I face in the 'Tutorial', this monster is more horrendous. Man... The skeleton couldn't even compare to this. This thing is

scariest than that. Just by looking at this thing already giving me the chills. Anyway, I appraise it;

Dream Teller Lv.3

Stats:

HP: 350 / 350 SPD: 105
ATK: 150 DEF: 35
MP: 320 / 320 SP: 400 / 400

Avg. 305

Skill:

Fear Lv.4 Cold Aura Lv.1
Ice spike Lv.2 Sleep Aura Lv.5

That's the result. Let's see, I'm still in danger so I'm not going to look at it that long. For comparison, my stats are nothing compare to that thing. The most important thing is that I don't have any skill regarding attack and I don't even have any weapons, while that bull looking freak has an offensive skill, Ice Spike.

Looking from it stats, I could still damage him using my fist. I don't know how effective it will be though. I think as far as I can cut him, it will do a significant damage to it. There's still one thing though, my body still refuses to move. From what I could see, it must've been the 'Fear' skill. It's only level four yet the effect is insane.

I slowly grab the wood from a campfire I set up earlier and point it against the monster. The monster seems to grunt. Honestly, the voice is so much hoarse now. It's actually ear piercing scream.

I put up my will to fight and put as much power in my feet. My plan was to pierce the monster with this firewood. I have to put extra power in my pushing motion then. For the record, this firewood isn't even sharp. And here I thought this is going to be a chill back chapter. I should've known better.

After sometimes I could finally feel the power I've been building up to pierce this monster. This monster have SPD stats almost twice as mine. So I have to catch it off guard. When should I do it though?

The monster grunt at me and start charging. Damn dude, I'm not even ready. I jump aside but its head hit me like a whip, launching me back. Damn, there's a lot of muscles in that neck huh? I guess that make sense...

I charge forward but the monster easily dodge it. For something as big as this thing to easily dodge me, I'm quite impressed. I swing the firewood at its neck and looks like it actually did something. I could feel a thud when I hit its neck. The monster grunt at me and backed off. I think its weak point is the neck.

It looks like it's trying to charge at me again. I put up a stance. Suddenly I feel the ground below me is shaking at the air around me is getting colder. Wait, is that thing trying to use the ice atta-

Stab

“Sh*t!” An ice spike emerge from the ground and pierce my kidney area. I should've know better. I manage to evade to avoid fatal damage, but the spike still pierce me. Without anything preventing me from bleeding out, I'm going to lose blood. I need to put pressure at it, but I don't think the monster will allow me to do that.

I could see my SP stats is draining. I think SP stands for stamina right? It make sense that my stamina is draining because I was stabbed. I just hope the next time I pee, it wouldn't hurt. That attack really did a number on me huh... I surprised that I'm not dead yet, but I know that if I get hit again, I'll be done for.

The cold air is also driving me back to sleep. I think the monster is using its sleeping aura skill and creating a nice cold breeze to further put me down to sleep. I could feel my grip is getting loose. My body doesn't even listen to me. This is 'hontouni yabai'.

No... I can't resist it anymore. My whole body is struggling to even stand. I need to finish this in one strike. But how...? I think its weak point is the neck, but how could I attack if I couldn't even move. How long has it been since this monster arrived? I feel like the monster has been tailing me since the start of day six.

“Sleep... The air is perfect for sleeping...”

Damn it! I hear that voice again. I could see that the monster is approaching me slowly. I fall from my stance and currently kneeling from the drowsiness. This drowsiness is beyond what it feels like when you're not sleeping for two days straight. I think drinking a coffee or even injecting straight caffeine through your vein wouldn't even drive this drowsiness away.

The monster is getting closer and it's putting its head around my body now. It's checking if I'm getting sleepy or not I guess. Honestly, I'm surprised that I could still think about what it's doing even with this drowsiness.

In a flash, a memory of someone that I know cross my head. It looks like a girl around 15 years old. Then it struck me. It's Lia, why do I suddenly remember about Lia...? But hey, thanks to that I could go back to my sense. I could clearly feel the monster is checking if I'm asleep or not.

I decided to continue my act. This time I'm fully aware of what's going on. I feel the monster is drawing closer and closer. Slowly opening its mouth trying to eat me whole. When I could feel its hot breath is right in front of my face, I open my eye, fall back, and stab its eye.

The monster shriek and jumped back. That shriek is not pleasant at all, especially when it's right in front of my face. I don't know why I remember Lia and why the thought of remembering her makes me go back to my sense, but, thank you.

I grab another piece of wood from the campfire and charge forward. It seems like the monster is still in a panic because it didn't sense me running forward to it. I put all of my forces to piercing the other eye. Because of that, Newton's third law of motion comes up and I get launched back.

Landing on my back, I could feel that the wind leaving my body. I could also still feel the intense pain in my back jolt. This is uncomfortable but I need to end this quick. The monster still screeching and shrieking from pain. Its voice is so loud that it felt more like a cry for help rather than anything.

I stand back up but the pain in my back is so much worse that I fall back to my knee. The stab wound in my back added with a scrape wound that I get just now is killing me. I could see that my SP is getting close to the fifties.

But I could that the monster HP is also getting pretty low. Overall, my HP and the monster's is almost the same. We're all in the one hundreds.

The monster's now running aimlessly at the opposite direction from where I'm standing. It looks like it's trying to charge and headbutt me or something. But from what I could see, the monster's just banging its head to a tree nonstop like its hearing a banger of a music. Damn, I know music is good but it's not THAT good.

Seeing that, I was a little bit relieved. I take off my clothes and rip it apart, making it into a long strip of clothes and wrap it around my lower back to apply pressure to the wound. I then light up the campfire again. Because that thing is still in a state of panic, I could easily light up a fire and warm myself back up. I take one if the wood that's still burning with fire and approach the monster. I guess you guys already know what I'm going to do right? Yeah, I stab the monster with the burning hot wood in its belly area and it bleed everywhere. The blood spurt out like a fountain and the monster shriek is getting less and less loud. The monster is dying.

<Individual: Said, has leveled up 1 - 3>

I go back to the campfire and fed it a couple more wood from the spare I had. The sky has turned black and the screaming of that monster has stopped. Let me think back. How could a monster wander off here? It's whether I got off the safe way, or that's just one in a million chance encounter. The wound in my lower back feels like hell right now.

Said **, Human Lv.3**

Age : 24 years

Stats :

HP: 73 / 290

SPD: 70

ATK: 165

DEF: 23

MP: 169 / 225

SP: 41 / 250

Avg. 233

Skill :

Appraisal Lv.3

Student Overseer Lv.1

Survivalist Lv.3

Great Sage

I've leveled up to level three and my stats rose a bit. What I'm really bumped about is that none of my skills leveled up. Well, it's not like I have any offensive stats that will be used in a fight. If that monster we're just a little bit faster on approaching me and eat me right away, I wouldn't be alive right now.

You know, I heard that you could cauterize a wound. I know how to do it, but I don't have any metal with me. I don't think cauterizing a wound using wood could be done, but I don't want to test it out either way. I think putting a pressure on a wound with a makeshift bandage is safer to be honest. I take off my undershirt, place it on top the fire, and wrap myself back with the shirt. I was planning to change the bandage with my undershirt, but right now I'm gonna sleep with my main shirt first. I hope I didn't encounter any other monster while sleeping. Anyways, goodnight!

...

It's the next day, my stats are looking a little bit better. My HP haven't recover yet, but at least I recover some of my SP and fully recover my MP. I guess the bleeding stopped my SP to be fully recovered huh? Well at least the pain in my back is not as bad as before.

I changed the bandage with the undershirt I've hang on top of the campfire and just start walking. I decided to go straight from where I'm heading, rather than re-tracking where or when did I get off the safe path. When I woke up, I thought to myself and think when I got off the 'path'. And I assume that I 'got off' from the very beginning. So if I'm gonna re-track my way back, I need to walk back one week, and I got no time for that. So in the end, I decided to stick to where I'm going.

From what the loli drawn, the way that I going is not that far away from where the safe path is. But because I'm not good with direction, I'm again just going to stick with where I'm going. If my calculations are correct, I should be able to get out from this forest in about the same time as if I were to take the safe path.

Last night fight really did a number on my body huh? Well, at least I can add it to my food supply right?

There's one thing that I wanted to address. The skill, great sage. I haven't got any response from with since I came out from the 'Tutorial'. Well, it's not like I have the time to think about that while fighting a monster right? Anyway, I wonder if I need to do something in order to activate it. Let's recall what I did in the tutorial in order to get a respond. From what I remember, I only had to call the system, but ever since I set off from the Anisopteragon area, I haven't got any respond from the system.

I wish I could ask the loli about it but I was too busy worrying about my student getting trapped and possibly dying in this forest. After I settle down from the panic, then I remember about the great sage skill. Yeah, I know the skill was literally displayed on the appraisal result, but because I was immediately interrupted by the loli, I forgot about it okay?

The flying skill that was synthesized by the great sage didn't even showed up in my appraisal result. Was everything from the tutorial was just a dream? I mean, it couldn't be right? For prove, there's the great sage skill imbedded in my appraisal result now. But I can't activate it. Maybe I needed to be in a pinch in order to activate it? Then why didn't it activate when I was fighting that monster?!

Anyway. Before I set foot and start walking again, I ate the food supply that I have. Not the monster though. I still don't know if the monster is safe to eat or not. What did I eat you ask? Well, before I set off, I take a part of the Anisopteragon with me. Not all of it though, because it would be too heavy. I just take around about one pounds of meat with me. You see, I didn't really have a backpack, so I ended up bringing the meat with the wood as one.

As of right now, the sun is not that high up. And I'm seeing less and less trees around. Could it be that I'm actually close to the end of the forest? I also heard a river sound. The sun is not that high up yet, so I still have a lot of time to relax. I didn't just run towards the river sound, but from what it seems, I'm indeed getting near the outside of the forest.

I walked a little more and I finally see it. The river! I also see across the river a huge plains of grass. The grass is not that tall, it looked like someone has been taking care of it. Because it's a plains, I could somewhat see something sticking out far away. I don't know what that is, but if that's a building, then it's quite a tall building. I don't think I could walk to wherever

that is right now considering my injury. So I just take a seat by the river and start drinking the water.

I did it. I finally got out from the forest! I wash my clothes that I used for the bandage and I also wash myself. The water is freezing, but at least with this I could lessened the chance of getting an infection. I decided to set up a campfire and let my clothes dry. After all of that, I take a huge sigh of relieve. After being inside of the forest for about one to two weeks including in the tutorial, I'm finally free.

Let's see, if I approach that thing that's sticking out from the top, and it turned out to be a city or a building and I encounter a person, what should I say? Wait, do they actually speak the same language as me? Well, technically the loli did understand my language, so I guess it would no problem right?

There's one last thing that I wanted to address. I hope my development on the great sage skill and the 'fly' skill doesn't get forgotten by the author if there's a second volume. I guess this is my stopping point huh?

I'm free from the forest, and in the horizon sticking out from the top is my new destination. I wonder what that is, but from what the story has been placing me, it's probably something that's not good. Anyway, I'm just going to stay here for now and relax.

CHAPTER 11

FINAL TEST, STORM GATE!

1

The voice sounds familiar. Yeah, I know that voice. It's the voice of a person that send us to this realm. Who do you think? It's none other than Inonami. I mean, the area was sent off by fire, so I guess I'm correct?

"Well... That was a WARM welcome!" (Okay, I'll bonk the author after this) Nate transformed into his human form. Did he literally just said that..? I-I'm speechless. It's not even funny dude.

"Oh my! Thank you! But in my opinion, it's more of a BLAZING entrance tho..." (I swear I'll kill the author)

She just accepted it and even improvised?! These two really take a step too FIRE with their jokes! (I-I'll torcher the author first actually, then I'll kill him)

Anyways. The voice reveal itself and it turned out to be the petite girl, Inonami. So my speculation are indeed correct! Lapuk who didn't know who's this girl take a stance. I could empathize though, the energy that she give off is not normal whatsoever. I only noticed it now, but the energy she gives off is actually greater than Lapuk's. And he's supposedly the guardian of this area right?

"I have a BURNING question..." (STOP IT!) Lapuk said.

"Oh yeah! You don't know me huh? Don't worry though, I'm here for just those two." Inonami point in our direction.

"Who are you?" Lapuk continued.

"Hm... Let's just say that I'm their guardian."

Lapuk glance at our direction. I and Nate nodded at the statement. Lapuk looks back at Inonami and he seems to be chanting something. Wait, is he planning to fight her?!

Not long after, the ground shake profusely and thunder roars in the sky. I shout to Lapuk, "Wait! She's related to us! She's our guardian! She's not lying!"

Lapuk then said, "I'm still the guardian of the Frigid Arches, therefore if anyone dares to enter without my permission, it's my duty to protect this area and get rid of them. And I still haven't forgive you guys for stealing my skill. I'm nice to you guys just because you're all still young!"

Oh yeah, I forgot that we did steal some of his skill huh? Well, Nate did, not me. But still, I helped him steal it. Even if we did help him get out from the 'weakened' state, the skill that he developed over hundreds of year did got stolen in an instant. I would also get mad if that were the case.

Anyway. Nate has already start to back away from the potential battleground and I followed him shortly. We're about to witness a battle between two powerful being, so I encased Nate and myself with a barrier with 50x the normal thickness. Though after making it, my MP almost dropped to zero. But at least, with this, we could still be able to stand if an attack decided to hit us.

Nate pull out his four sectioned staff and made a stance. The staff seems to shrink a little. I ask Nate as of why it did that. Then he just said that the weapon we got from the Mother Tree will adjust its size, weight, and overall compatibility with the holder. So that's why the staff shrink in size. I looked at my sword. It seems my sword did also shrink a little bit, but not as much as Nate's though. His staff when we're still in the Mother Tree are about 2 times taller than me. But now, the staff are about just as tall as Nate's human form.

Oh yeah, it seems they're still charging up their spell. It's like watching super saiyan powering up their ability. But at least, they're not screaming. But the earth is the one screaming though. There're thunder everywhere, earthquake, wind going all over the place, cold and hot air being mixed together, and much more. In fact, there's so much going on that my sense is confused, so I decided to turn off my detection skill.

I asked Nate why he took out his staff. He said that it's because it will be a backup weapon to block any attack that goes through the barrier. I don't see why a four sectioned staff like that could block an attack that goes through a multilayered barrier that's supposedly 50 times denser than normal, but okay. Oh yeah, Nate also grow out a pair of wing from his back like it's not a big deal and encased himself with dark magic.

I decided to do the same thing as Nate. I encased myself with holy magic and draws out both of my sword. But I'm not used with using two sword at the same time. I decided to activate my parallel processing ability. Suddenly everything becomes way easier and lighter. I cannot tell you how exactly it felt like, but I feel like I'm conscious of everything that I'm doing. It felt like I was being put as a puppeteer and now controlling two puppet at the same time. But for some reason, I feel like I could easily move both puppet at the same time without much effort. Is like I'm having four arms rather than two. It's a weird feeling, but after I tried it by swinging both of my sword around, it felt like both of my sword were being swung by my dominant hand. This feels weird and awesome at the same time. Oh yeah, I also could think two things at the same time. And on top of all that, I didn't even feel like my brain was being bombarded with information right now, it's amazing!

Anyway, from what I could see, Inonami is already encased herself with blazing blue fire, while Lapuk seems to make an armor out of a mix of wood and dirt. Even if I'm not using detection right now, I could still feel the mana fluctuating around the area like a storm. The mana is so strong that my mana absorb ability went up 1 level.

"I don't know how you're able to teleport inside of the Frigid Arches, but I, as the guardian of this place will now eliminate you for trespassing!" Said Lapuk.

"From the start, I don't have any intention as of to fight you. I'm here just to pick those two people out from this place. Also, you better watch out with whom you're speaking." Inonami speak coldly.

The last time I heard her speak this cold was when I was attacked by the Acnolings in the forest. Even that was not as clear as this. Is she pissed about all of this? I mean, she's the creator of the Everlasting Embrace right? Couldn't she just remove Lapuk out of existence if that were the case?

The next second Inonami and Lapuk disappear and couple moments later I could hear a loud boom and a streak of light shooting up. The 'boom' was so loud that it almost burst my eardrum. I looked up in the air and all I could see was a huge ball of fire and a little speck of lightning going around it. If my assumption is correct, the lightning speck is Lapuk while the ball of fire was Inonami's attack. Though Inonami is nowhere to be seen.

#

[Third Person POV]

Inonami shoot up at the sky and summoned a fireball the size of a huge meteor. The ball was so hot that if a bullet was shot, it would melt before it could even reach the fireball.

Lapuk use his fulgur magic and shot himself up as fast as lightning. He realize that the armor that he made using his magic couldn't hold the heat of the fireball, so he decided to do an attack and immediately ran away from the heat. He knew that his only weakness is fire, therefore every time he makes an attack, his armor would be slowly burn away.

From what Lia and Nate could see was just a ball of fire the size of a meteor emitting lightning strike to the ground. But from Lapuk and Inonami perspective, the lightning was Lapuk attacking Inonami, while Inonami just dodge his attack effortlessly.

The ball of fire is slowly getting bigger and bigger. Inonami created a clone of herself and start to cast a lot of fireball. She then launches it at Lapuk.

Knowing this, Lapuk use earth magic in order to make himself a shield. But his magic was too slow. He ended up being hit by almost all of Inonami's

fireball. But before the final fireball strike him, he blitz his way out from the barrage. Luckily his defensive stats makes him take less damage.

He needed to at least touch Inonami once. Lapuk's strongest attack is actually his Rot Attack. It's an attack that will make him damage himself, but his enemy will become rotten. The rotten effect causes the enemy to slowly die and crumble to pieces whether that's an undead or not. After he hit his enemy with his rot attack, it's just a battle of endurance before the enemy die.

It's only been three second after the fight start. Inonami's fireball seems to get bigger and bigger as time goes on. Inonami create thousands of fire lance in the sky and rains them down mercilessly.

Lapuk decided to go fully on his SPD stats and increase it to the max. He uses his lightning magic, light magic, prediction, future sight, and sense skill in order to max out his chance of not getting hit.

The fire lance rained down on the area setting it all up on fire. The speed of the lance raining down is nothing compare to what their reaction speed was. Thus it's quite easy for Lapuk to dodge most of them. But as time goes on, the gap between the rains of lances becomes narrower, making it harder to dodge.

Knowing this, Lapuk then decided to overhaul his build and now max out his defense stats. He's using stronghold, endurance, determination, HP recovery, hard and dragon skin, and strength to maximize his defense stats. He could activate all of his skill at once, but that will burn his MP super-fast. Even now, he's using energy and energy conserve, longevity, advance mana absorb, and ultimate life, still drain his MP a considerable amount.

By making his defense stats maxed out, he could just charge in on Inonami, ignoring the fact that he's bombarded by hundreds or even thousands of fire lance raining from the sky. The lances itself is not small. It's about 1 meter in length. He charges in ignoring the fact that his armor is almost fully burned out. But Inonami once again easily dodge his attack.

Through the vision of Nate and Lia, they could only see a streak of light dancing through the air while Inonami is nowhere to be seen.

Inonami's fire lance rain also hit their area. But because of the barrier, they're still quite fine. Although as time goes on small cracks begin to appear on the inside of the barrier. The heat from the lance makes the inside of the barrier hot. Nate readied his stance and staff in order to deflect all the lances going in to them. While Lia is just standing there with both of her sword encased with holy fire. It seems like Lia is chanting something.

It's only been ten seconds after the battle starts. Both Lapuk and Inonami doesn't seem to show any fatigue with their attacks. Inonami still launching countless fire lance that already created a huge burning crater on the ground and Lapuk still trying to hit Inonami with his claw.

The ground shakes profusely and a massive wall starts to appear around the battlefield. The earth then surges, creating a tsunami out of earth about 30 meters (~33 ft.) tall.

Inonami makes the fire encasing her thicker and wider. She then create five golem made out of fire about as tall as the earth wall surrounding the area. All the golem was trying to break the earth wall that was still growing in the battlefield. Then a huge fire wall appeared from the ground shooting upwards with the force of an erupting volcano. The force of the fire wall stops the earth surge in its track. Through the intense heat, there're no more trees in the vicinity of the battlefield. It's just left with a barren ground.

The whole Frigid Arches area that was freezing are now hotter than a hot spring. The freezing fog now becomes hot water vapor that burns the skin when you came in contact with it.

The air starts to mix with dust particle that was created by the explosion from the lances hitting the ground at a high speed. Lapuk utilize the dust particle in the air and start moving it around at the speed of a bullet (~760m/s or 1700mph (2.3 mach)), creating a dust storm that sweep all of the raining lances away. With so much speed, Lapuk could only control so much particle in a short amount of time. Though after that, the fire lances are starting to fall again.

'Just how much MP does this girl have?!' Said Lapuk to himself.

Inonami was a little bit surprised that Lapuk manage to briefly stop her attacks. But then she continues her attack immediately after. But through that

short little time, Lapuk manage to close the distance between him and Inonami and even caught her off guard. Though to his surprise, when he swing his claw it the sphere of blazing fire that encased her, she disappear. No. It's just one of her clone. With rage, Lapuk explode his own body to thousands of pieces of rock that launches at the speed 10 times that of the speed of sound.

Because of this, the stone was shot everywhere, including to where Lia set the barrier. The stone that was launched didn't even appear in their vision because of the warped air outside, because of the intense heat. With the speed 10 times that the speed of sound, the barrier that Lia built was easily broken by it. The rock that hit it also shatter into smaller pieces. Luckily, none of the fragment hit them. But with the barrier broken, they were immediately bombarded by the lances that rained down towards them.

With total concentration, Nate encase both Lia and himself with the dark magic. At the same time, he swing his four sectioned staff like a nunchucks, creating an invisible barrier that knocked almost all of the falling lances to the side. He swing his staff at the speed comparable to the speed of the several falling lances. In a more slowed down time, he hit every single lances that was about to land in its side, therefore knocking it to the side. Even though the lance was made out of fire, it is surprisingly hard. Probably harder than an ordinary metal actually. The sonic boom of the thousands of rock that exploded, was heard a moment later.

The lances that manage to get through Nate's defense was either deflected or destroyed by Lia's swords. She used her perseverance skill to maximize her movement using the skill 'Sonic Speed Movement and Reaction' in order to deflect and/or destroy the lances that got through. She have her 'starlight' in her right arm, while the old sword was in her left.

The area the stone hit created more dust cloud, therefore the dust start moving in circle. Lapuk, even though it seems like he doesn't even have a physical body anymore, still controlling the earth around the battlefield. He planned to launch the dust around the battlefield at bullet speed again.

Knowing this, Inonami rushed towards Lia and Nate. With her speed and flexibility, she easily infiltrate their defense and create a fire barrier to protect them from the bullet speed dust particle that was about to occur. It takes a

second for the both of them to realize that Inonami has basically teleported behind them. So in that second, Inonami is actively dodging all of their attacks while also casting a barrier spell in order to protect them and protect herself.

Not even one second later, the dust in the air speeds up creating another dust storm that could destroy a house in a matter of seconds. This time, the speed of the dust storm increases to where even some of the particle made it inside of the fire barrier. Luckily the dust that makes it inside of the barrier already lost its speed.

The dust storm now lasted just a little more than 3 seconds. In that time Inonami sees that Nate eyes is super red because of the concentration he had to use, Lia used her necklace and her sword ability to further sped up her attacks and reaction time. Inonami also appraise both of them.

Lia *, Human Lv.2**

Age : 10 years

Stats :

HP: 411/532 SPD: 136

ATK: 399 DEF: 55

MP: 123/446 SP: 57/ 420

Avg. 450

Skill:

Title:

Perseverance Swordplay Lv.10 Ruler of Perseverance

Pure Determination Mana Absorb Lv.8 Master of Holy Magic

Unyielding Disintegration

Parallel Processing Lv.1

~

Nate **, *Felis catus* Lv.1**

Age : 5 Months

Status : Transformed, Everlasting Healer

Stats :

HP: 410/481 SPD: 238

ATK: 320 DEF: 45

MP: 334/888 SP: 100/704

Avg. 598

Skill:

Envy **Wing Lv.7** **Hit Lv.10** **Divine Skin Lv.3**

Telepathy Lv.4 **Flame Shot Lv.5** **Mana Absorb Lv.10**

Self-Healing Lv.1 **Dark Magic Lv.10** **Holy Res Lv.9**

Title:

Holder of Envy (6%)

Inonami doesn't know this. But Lia's Swordplay went up to level 10 and now is in the verge of evolving to the next stage of skill. What Inonami immediately want to see is that both of their MP and SP. She sees that even in the short time that their barrier was broken, they already exert so many of their SP and MP just to defend themselves from her battle. And it's only been twenty seconds after her battle started.

After the dust storm settled, Inonami gets out from the fire barrier and seems to be chanting something. Her fist was glowing white because of the heat. She boost herself up using fire and seems to grab the huge fireball that still expand slowly. The fireball now seems to be getting smaller and smaller but the fireball seems to be creating more and more heat. It seems like Inonami still feeding it some mana.

The dirt dust that's on the air seems to be gathering in one place, creating a lump of dirt. Slowly, the lump of dirt seems to be forming some sort of a body. It's Lapuk new body. Using the advance skill of earth magic, Lapuk could make himself a different type of body. The new body stands a little over 2 meters tall and very muscular. It also seems like he's finally utilizing his lightning magic. He completely encase himself in lightning.

Rocks starts flying all over Lapuk's new body, extending all over the battlefield. An electric discharge then connects all of the flying rocks in the battlefield with a red strand of lightning. Because of the dust particle, the air in the battlefield also become electrified. Even Lia and Nate could feel the electric charge from inside the fire barrier. Supposedly the barrier acts like a conductor that conducts electricity to the ground, but now even the air inside the barrier becomes electrified. Luckily Nate's dark magic and Lia's holy magic barrier prevent them from getting shocked.

The battle now becomes slower. The rain of lances are now directing it's trajectory to the shrinking ball of flames that Inonami seems to be holding. From what it seems, she's trying to prevent it from shrinking fully, and possibly being extinguished. Thankfully, the electric discharge in the air also prevent it to fully be extinguished.

Though, because fire is still quite inferior to lightning. Lapuk's trying to control all the fire spell that was casted by Inonami. But it seems like his effort was always failing. Maybe, Inonami's fire was a little different from the normal one. Though, some like that that has the property of a fire will also be able to be controlled by Lapuk's advance lightning magic.

Lapuk then see that the lances has stopped raining towards the fireball that's shrinking. It also stopped appearing from the sky. It seems like Inonami has cancelled the spell. Her MP is probably running low after all. She used such a massive wide range skill that in just one second could destroy an entire forest, so it's just a waiting game until she runs out of MP.

With that Lapuk decided to also cancel his lightning spell. He already used a lot of his MP that even with his MP regen capabilities couldn't keep up, it'll need around one to three hours until his MP are fully regenerated. After he cancel his lightning magic, Lapuk create several stone pillar that shot upward towards Lia. But when the stone pillar comes near Lia, it just crumbles then disappear. The reason for its disappearance was because the air and light surrounding Inonami and the ball of fire she's holding are actually bending.

'How could she bend light? Could she actually have a light magic skill?' That was what Lapuk said to himself.

But not long after, the ball of fire that's the size of a house suddenly shrink in size until it's only the size of a marble. The marble size ball seems to be glowing pure white. The temperature of the ball probably reach up to six thousand degrees Celsius (~10,500 °F). It's literally hotter than the surface of the sun.

After a couple moment, Lapuk finally felt it. The gravity around the area where he stand is getting lighter. Lapuk then come to a realization. He think that the girl have super advance earth magic skill, gravitation magic. In

Lapuk's perspective time slowed down. He thinks a lot of possibility of how could he win this fight, despite the enemy he's facing have more knowledge and capabilities in earth magic?

A light arrow shot towards Lapuk from where Lia and Nate were hiding. Lapuk that still in his thought, in shock, couldn't react fast enough to be able to dodge the attack. The attack goes inside Lapuk's body and just disappear. Lapuk take a close look at who's the one launching the skill, it was Lia. Then he realize, the skill that she casted to him was actually holy magic. Though Lapuk still doesn't know what does the magic actually does.

In the same second, a loud rumble could be heard from all over the battlefield. It was the sound of the earth getting pulled by the gravitational force of the ball that Inonami made. Knowing this, Lapuk decided to activate all of his skill and immediately charges forward at Inonami.

As he get closer and closer to her, he feels the blood from his body slowly rushing towards his head. He feels like the closer he gets to her by jumping, the more it felt like he's falling. The battleground are now collapsing over the gravitational force of Inonami's magic. Rocks were pulling and levitating off the ground. Even Lia and Nate also gets pulled up by the gravitational force. But Nate quickly grab Lia and flew away as fast as he can manage.

The glowing white ball that Inonami made attracts all the things in the battleground. Lapuk's trying to find something he could grab onto, and he decided to just jump across the rocks that were being pulled up. He struggle to keep himself in the ground, but because he jumped up, the gravitational force on him was far greater. As he search for his stepping stone in order to keep himself on the ground, he kicked all the stone to Inonami's direction. He then see that every stone that he kicked towards Inonami were all being turned to glass then got absorbed by the glowing white ball.

Inonami aim the glowing white ball at Lapuk's direction. She know that by just aiming it at him wouldn't necessarily makes it easier to absorbed him, but that's not what Inonami's plane are. She actually intended to launch the gravitational ball at Lapuk's direction. But she must hit him directly in order to eliminate him. Even so, it seems like Inonami is waiting for something to happen.

Lapuk keeps struggling to keep himself on the ground. His survival instinct are screaming at him to stay alive, from all of that survival instinct he's state of panic. His MP almost ran out because he's using all of his skill at the same time. Even if his SP stats couldn't get lower, Lapuk still find himself tired from all of the jumping.

Suddenly, all power from Lapuk's leg and whole body disappear. He almost fainted in the spot if it were not because of his thousands of year of survival instinct kicking him back to his consciousness. He felt as if all of his skill that he activated were all gone up in flame. It felt like something has forcefully turned off all of his skills. Even with this, Lapuk still struggle his way out from the gravitational force that's pulling him. But because of the sudden tiredness, his leg gave in on itself and Lapuk couldn't get it to move. He's too tired to be jumping all over the place. He feels like he has gotten old. All of his sense are becoming dull, and everything seems to be sped up a considerable amount.

What Lapuk's experiencing is the spell that Lia launch at him. It's a holy magic spell that makes all of your target skills to be disabled. Because Lapuk has been living for thousands of years because of his Ultimate Life skill, when that skill got turned off forcefully, his body would be that of a normal human that has been living for thousands of years. Because there're no human that has ever lived for that long or could ever live for that long, his whole body are crumbling to the ground. The spell that Lia launch at him needs time to take effect. Therefore Inonami was actually waiting for that to happen.

Truthfully, the both of them didn't even have any conversation even via telepathy. But as soon as the battle went a little bit slower, Lia remember about the discussion she had with the voice about how to erase Lapuk's rotting status. She then decided to just deactivate all of Lapuk's skill at once. She asked the voice, and got the solution right away. Without wasting much time, she immediately start casting the spell. And when she could finished it, it just so happen that Lapuk was in a panic. Without a second thought, she then lauches the spell at Lapuk. But when she did it, she realize that the spell was too slow to catch Lapuk off guard even if he's in a panic. Knowing this, Nate steps in and hit the spell with his staff. The spell was launched almost five times faster than it used to be and hitting Lapuk straight on his heart.

When Lia launches the spell at Lapuk, Inonami immediately know what spell it was and decided to just stay in her place. She could easily approach Lapuk with the glowing ball, but she decided to see how effective the spell that Lia launches at Lapuk first, then after that she'll approach Lapuk. But it seems like the spell was a total success and Lapuk are totally crippled now.

Inonami aim the white glowing ball at Lapuk's crippled body and launches it. The ball she launches at him were actually a mini star. She make a miniature star inside the planet and condensing it with so much fire magic that the inside of the huge fireball were actually plasma. She then start condensing it into smaller and smaller ball until it became a star in the size of a just a marble. It explains why the ball reach up to six thousand degrees Celsius. The condense star doesn't really have a gravitational force like the sun, but it has enough gravitational force to pull rocks from the ground.

Inonami launches the miniature star at Lapuk. And at the time when the star is in the way of hitting Lapuk, everything in its way was disintegrated. Even before the star hit Lapuk, his body just evaporates, that's how hot it is. But before the star could hit the ground and possibly exploded everything, Inonami rushes towards where Nate has flew, grabbing the both of them, and teleporting them away outside the Everlasting Embrace. The speed of the star that Inonami shot was about half that the speed of sound. So in that time, before the star hit the ground, Inonami manage to take Lia and Nate to safety.

The area that got hit by the miniature star exploded with the impact of 20 times that of a nuclear bomb. The entire entrance of the Frigid Arches area has become a radioactive wasteland, and the bridge connecting the Frigid Arches and the Mother Tree also has been destroyed. The entire Frigid Arches area expand for over hundreds of thousands of kilometers. Even so the damage of the star being exploded was not little, the blast zone of the miniature star creates a crater about fifty thousand kilometer across (~31,000 mi).

The blast was then heard by the surrounding area about one to two days after the initial explosion. Overall, the battle between Inonami and the guardian of the Frigid Arches was more like a game. Inonami is unimaginably stronger than Lapuk. Their battle was over in just about 40 seconds, but the damage that it left behind is catastrophic. Because Everlasting Embrace was

a self-regenerating realm, the damage that Inonami left behind will eventually be fixed in a couple of months and the realm will decide its new guardian of the Frigid Arches. The battle was over at the very start.

#

(If I could, put Inonami or Lapuk's Character Card)

[Lia's POV]

I can't see anything! One second a massive ball of fire appear. The next second fire arrow starts raining down on us. A freaking ginormous wall and a tsunami of earth then appear. Then all of that get stopped by a freaking fire monster. What the hell just happened?!

All I could remember was that our barrier got broken and Nate protecting me for a split second before I activate my ability and all of my equipment to destroy the incoming arrow that got pass Nate's ability. After that I remember that Inonami suddenly teleports behind us and protecting us. After that I remember making a spell of some sort before Nate fly me away from the battlefield.

I might've passed out after that. Because we're suddenly in a forest (again). What kind of forest is this? I didn't sense an overwhelming mana emitting from this forest. Even the Zeruiah Grove emit more mana than this. Wait... Could it be...? Could it be that we're back outside of the Everlasting Embrace?

I look around. I couldn't see anyone. Where's Nate? I stand up and stretch myself before taking a short look around. I didn't want to use any of my skill to find them. Well, I'm indeed feeling quite refreshed, but I still don't want to use any of my skill.

After a short walk, I could see a figure right in the distance. The figure seems to be looking at a part of the forest that's raining. While that part of the forest is raining, the figure itself didn't get hit by the rain. It's like there's an invisible wall separating the two part of the forest. I could feel the cold air being blown from that part of the forest.

Before I could get near that figure, I was touched by something in the back of my heel. I look back at it, and it turns out to be a cat, it's Nate.

Nate said to me using telepathy our next journey will be going across the Storm Gate. I ask him what's a Storm Gate, but he just said to ask Inonami about it because he said that even he doesn't know about it too much. Then I ask where Inonami is. Then the cat point his head forward to the figure that's standing behind the raining forest.

So that's Inonami huh? I tried to approach her, but Nate immediately stop me and tell me just to wait in my initial spot where I woke up. When we get back, Nate tell me that after I shot my final spell towards Lapuk, I immediately passed out. Nate then tell me the rest of the battle before a streak of flame gone towards him and teleporting him and me outside of the Everlasting Embrace.

When we got teleported, Nate feel a sense of relieve before passing out like me. The person who teleported us out was none other than Inonami. Well, she's really something huh? She basically single handedly defeat Lapuk, the guardian of everlasting embrace. I mean, she's the one who created it, so I guess that's to be expected.

Right now, the sun has just started to rise. The cold air surrounding the forest are getting warmer each minute that passed by. Nate has been awake about 1 hour before me, so he decided to gather up some wood. I use fire magic to make our self a nice campfire. Nate then pulls out some sort of a chicken meat from his spatial ring and cooks it beside the campfire. Oh yeah, he already transform himself to his human form.

Not long after we started to cook, Inonami approach us. She said that this will be the final day that we'll meet for now. She said that beyond that raining forest is the Storm Gate. One of the four gate separating the forest we're in and the human civilization. She said that the forest we're in is called the Forest of Lemuria or the Lemuria Forest. It's the biggest forest in this world. It covers approximately eight million square kilometers (~5 million square miles). She said that before we're approved to get to the outside of the forest, we need to be able to withstand the 'Storm Gate'.

The Storm Gate is one of the four gate of the Lemuria forest that has a guardian. Inonami said that the guardian of these gates are all S class rank monster. Therefore there's no way for us to beat them. But she said that we just need to get pass the Storm Gate with our own ability. The Storm Gate is

known with the hardest difficulty gate out of the four. What makes this gate hard is because when you approach the middle of it, the storm gets fiercer.

Inonami said that the guardian of this gate is also quite powerful, but not as powerful as the guardian of the fire gate. She tell us that we need to walk for approximately 5 days in order to get across the Storm Gate. This is the final challenge that Inonami give to us in order to deemed us worthy for being able to live in this new world. She then order us to not use our skill in order to make our movement speed faster, but she still allow the use of skill for battle and survival purposes. So I guess Nate is naturally faster than I am right now because his SPD stats is higher than mine even before we 'train'.

This time, there's no resurrection. Once you die, you're dead for good. The Storm Gate are always being blasted by a fierce storm. The monster inside the Storm Gate all have high durability and survival instinct. If not, how can they survive the fierce weather yeah?

She purposely didn't give us any food supply. It's probably because she wanted us to find our own food in the Storm Gate. I guess if there's a lot of monster there, there's also a lot of potential food supply. But still, in order for us to gain food we still need to kill the monster that's lurking inside of the gate.

She said that she'll watch our surrounding in case the guardian of the Storm Gate decided to close in on us. But if we're in trouble because of the monster we decided to fight was too strong, she will not help us and will just watch us die. It's a harsh statement, but I totally understand why she did that. She basically guide us through the entire forest, therefore we might not be able to withstand a normal conflict in this world. Seeing how powerful the monster are in this world, I wouldn't be surprised if the human in this world is even more powerful.

Finally she gave us a waterproof map and a compass in order to find our way outside of the Storm Gate. It's a magical map. She tell us how to use it. It's like having a digital map. I could swipe my finger across the map and the map landscape shift with my finger. I could zoom in and out, and even click an area and it will tell us which monster could be present. The map tell us about the weather, the monster near us, and the path we should take to get out from the Storm Gate.

After she gave us the map and tell us how to use it, she wave her goodbyes and turned into a streak of light that launches towards the Storm Gate. Her speed is really amazing. Every time she dashes forward, she turned into a streak of light, and a sonic boom could be heard because of the sound barrier. I don't think even I could withstand moving from zero to one mach in just one second. How did those guys do it? How did Lapuk and Inonami do it? Is it just because of their SPD stats? Surely not right? If you break the sound barrier in just one second, your body will feel like you have hit a wall, your bones will be crushed, and so much more awful injuries. There must be a technique to achieve that.

You know... Thinking about Inonami and Lapuk. Did they really need to go that far? I don't really know how much Lapuk hate us, but is the penalty of trespassing an area without the guardian's permission is death? I mean, Inonami is the one who created the dimension herself right? Surely such rules wouldn't have to be applied to her. In fact she could just bend the rule if she wanted to. If I think more about it, it feels like she's just wanted to show how powerful she really is.

We decided to eat our breakfast before going inside the rainy forest. I ask Nate how many food are left inside of his space ring. He said that it will be enough for just 1 day left. That's okay I guess. So in one day, we need to be able to find a creature, kill it, harvest it, examine whether or not it's safe to it, cooking it, and finally eating eat. It shouldn't be that hard right? Right?!

Anyway. Our next goal will be going through the storm gate. Right now we already packed our stuff and now currently standing at the border of the rainy forest. It really does looks like a barrier has been casted in order to keep the rain away from the other parts of the forest. We finally take our first step inside of the rainy forest.

“So here it is huh? Our last test. The storm Gate!”

EPILOGUE

SITUATION AFTER THE ACCIDENT

1

The world is indeed changing. There's a huge aurora visible from every part of the world one night before several people were reported being found with a weird uniform. One people with the uniform were appraised and discovered with the hero skill.

One country with the most cases regarding the teleportation accident has started their research on the causes of this 'Teleportation Accident'.

On the other side of the country there has been a new report regarding a man that escaped the 'forest'. The man seems to be injured quite heavily. The guard of that specific area decided to deploy a team to save the man's life. While the report of the sighting has yet to be announced to the higher ups.

On the other side of the universe there's a news about a class being sucked in to nothingness. The news spread around the globe and hundreds of research are currently being held. The same week, a supernatural sky phenomenon happen at night. Many people believe that it's god's wrath while scientist are currently searching for the scientific reasons behind the phenomenon.

After the initial teleportation, the system has been told by a being far greater than it, to take care of the children. The system have gave them special

skill in order to face danger, but there're only some of them that the system really have to look after.

Currently, only a couple of the teleported children were gathered. They're all got teleported in the same country. It can't be determine how many people got teleported around the world. But the ones that got teleported in the city were more or less four people.

“The system is possibly crumbling apart. I should fix it.”

A voice was heard by no one in the center of the planet core. ‘The figure’ is seeing a robot body being chained up to some sort of a receptionist desk. It’s probably the center of the system. The figure said it wants to fix it.

‘You know... Sometimes... I feel like this is a game...’

AFTERWORD

Hewwo~~! Thanks for reading! This is my first time writing some sort of a book. So if there're writing mistake that you spotted, feel free to give me feedback! I'm sure there're also a fact in the beginning of the chapter that later got forgotten by me, so again, if you find it, feel free to give me feedback! If you find anything wrong in the text also, again, feel free to give me feedback! I'm so afraid of this because my main language is not actually English. But please go easy on the critic for my own feeling~

This story was the story that I came up with myself, so if there're some similar stories, I'm sorry. Just know that I didn't copy from them. Usually if there're references to other works like anime, manga, or other light novel, I would just write them without any hesitation. Like when the teacher says "United State of Smash!" is referring to the anime and manga of My Hero Academia (Boku no Hero Academia), and etc.

The magic system in this 'novel' was mainly inspired by three other light novels. That is, So I'm a Spider so What (Kumo Desu ga, Nani ka?), That Time I got Reincarnated as a Slime (Tensei Shitara Slime datta Ken), and Re:Zero Starting life in another world from zero (Re:Zero kara hajimeru isekai seikatsu). From those three light novel, I took a couple inspiration like the magic system and some skill to build the magic system in this 'novel'. But of course, I also took my own magic system that I built in order to add to its originality.

The illustration in the 'novel' that I add was not my drawing. All of them I get from the internet. You could actually see that in the 'Kaiser Info Card', I basically just took a picture of a slime from the game brave frontier. Even the everlasting embrace was a place from that exact game. To be honest, the game, Brave Frontier, will be my main inspiration for the world building in this 'novel'. Although, the country and places will hopefully be announce in the second volume. (If I decided to make it lol).

~ Anyway! Thank you for reading till the end! ~